This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

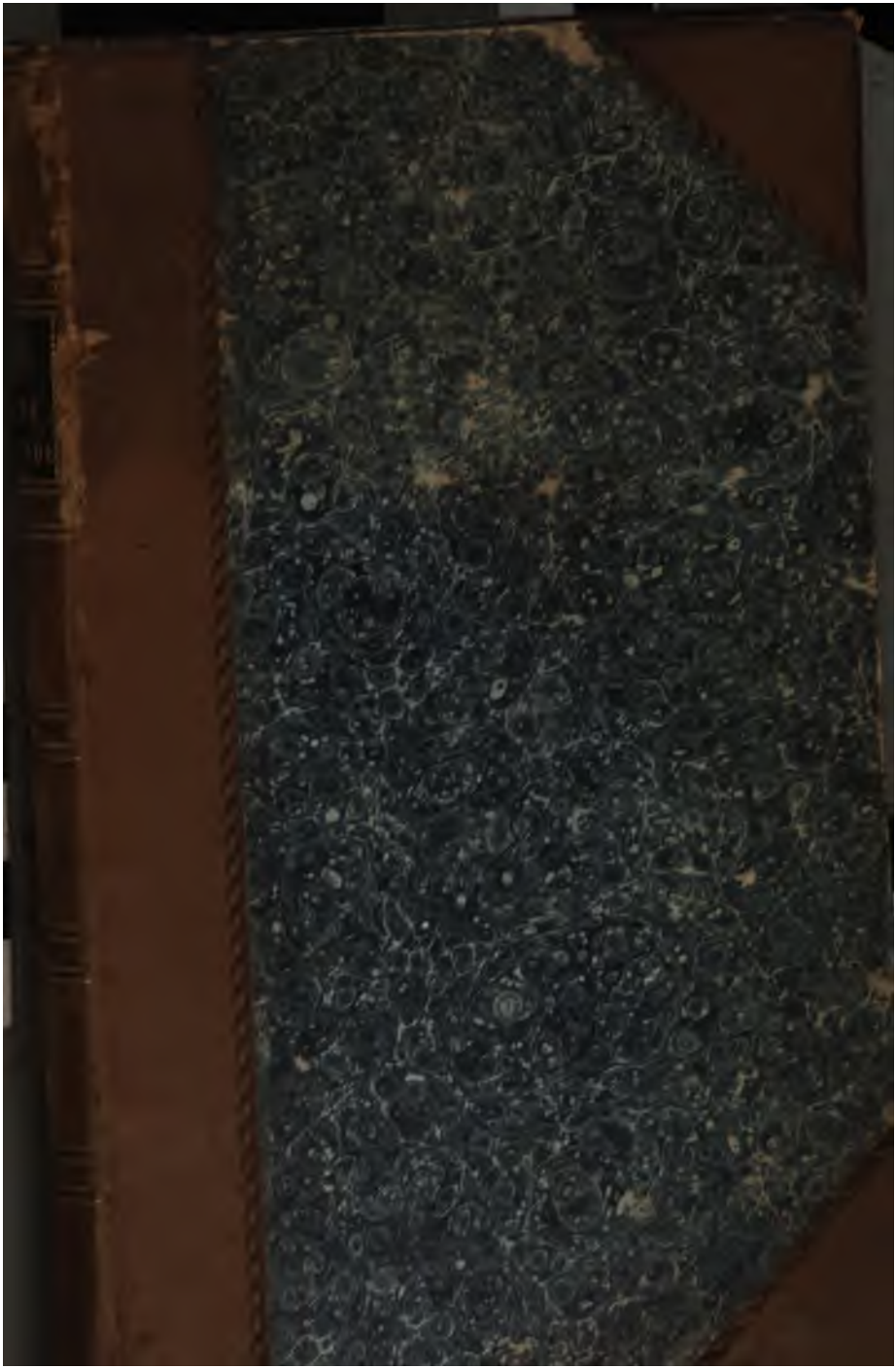
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`



6000511560

41.
515.

6000511560

41.
515.

Merrye Englaunde;

OR,

The Goldene Daies of Goode Queene Besse.

London:
CHARLES DOLMAN, 61, NEW BOND STREET.

MDCCCXLI.

515.

PRINTED AT ST. PAUL'S PRESS, PRIOR PARK, BY W. MURRAY.

* * * The words I utter,
Let none think flattery, for they'll find them truth.
This royal infant (heaven still move about her)
Though in her cradle, yet now promises
Upon this land a thousand thousand blessings,
Which time shall bring to ripeness: she shall be
* * * * * *
A pattern to all princes living with her,
And all that shall succeed: Sheba was never
So covetous of wisdom and fair virtue
Than this pure soul shall be; all princely graces
* * * * * *
With all the virtues that attend the good
Shall still be doubled on her: Truth shall nurse her;
Holy and heavenly thoughts still council her;
She shall be loved and feared; her own shall bless her.
* * * * * *
Good grows with her;
In her days every man shall eat in safety,
Under his own vine, what he plants; and sing
The merry songs of peace to all his neighbours.
God shall be truly known, and those about her
From her shall read the perfect ways of honour,
And by those claim their greatness, not by blood.
* * * * * *
She shall be, to the happiness of England,
An aged princess: many days shall see her,
And yet no day without a deed to crown it.
* * But she must die,
She must; the saints must have her, yet a virgin;
A most unspotted lily shall she pass
To the ground, and all the world shall mourn her.

SHAKSPEARE'S *King Henry VIII.*

INTRODUCTION.

In writing the following pages, I lay no claim to authorship, having done nothing more than make a faithful compilation from various works, weaving the different events recorded in them, according to their dates, into a narrative. The characters of "Syr Hubert," "Ladye Tracie," and their attendants, are from imagination, as well as that of the Jesuit Missionary, who is supposed to write the Diary; but their adventures have really occurred, being copied from several unpublished MSS. to which I have had access. All the other characters recorded in the Diary have existed; and the occurrences in their lives, as well as the letters, are taken from authentic documents—chiefly from Lingard's History of England; Dodd's Church History;

Challoner's Memoirs of Missionary Priests; Yepez, Bishop of Tarrascona, on the English Persecution; Ellis's Original Letters; Persons de Persecutione Anglicana; Dr. Bridgewater's Concertatio; Martyrio de Sedici Sacerdoti; Harrington's Nugæ Antiquæ; and Lodge's Illustrations of English History.

These researches were made solely for the amusement of my leisure hours, impelled by a feeling which, from my earliest years, has been uppermost in my mind. Gentle reader, it is to my sovereign and implacable hatred to misnomers that you are indebted for this literary treasure: and particularly to those misnomers springing from pride and prejudice, and in the mind of that proudest and most prejudiced of created beings, an Englishman; but that he is so, is not an assertion which I mean to put forth unsupported by proof. Ask an Englishman of his country, and you are instantly overpowered with the changes rung upon "Merry England," its riches, its happiness, its importance, its supe-

riority and sovereignty over every other nation, each encomium ending in, "Merry England"—merry par excellence:—before whose merriment the mirth of every other country sinks into very sadness. Startling as this may seem, it is urged with so much confidence, and with such utter defiance of all objection, that the boldness of the proposition puts all doubt to flight, and, alike without reasoning or hesitation, it is adopted and passes current. Yet, after this assumption has been uttered in all the self-confidence of an unsupported assertion, when reflection resumes her sway, a question may arise in the mind, and "the heart distrusting asks," can this be true? Is England indeed the "Merry England," that, by universal consent, it is adjudged to be, till to deny or doubt it is nothing less than heresy?—To those who like to save themselves the trouble of thinking, by adopting a general opinion, formed no matter under what bias, England will remain "Merry England" still. I wish them joy of it, but they must beware. One

excursion through a village, in any county of this smiling land, will be sufficient to overturn the satisfactory conviction, or at least to create doubts as unpleasant as they are startling. A starving, oppressed, and demoralised peasantry, enduring all the varieties of woe, that extreme of want, and vice, and discontent, can inflict on human nature. Childhood and youth without cheerfulness or vigour, middle age without comforts or content, and old age, sickness, and decrepitude condemned to have their wants relieved and their sufferings mitigated, only in accordance with government regulation,—benevolence duly prescribed by act of parliament,—alms bestowed by legislative authority, and doled out by "The Board of Guardians," properly armed with "full discretionary power," beneath the fostering shelter of the "Union Work House"—where conjugal felicity is effectually promoted by the separation of husband and wife, filial and parental ties and duties materially cherished and inculcated by parting

children from their parents, and where, poverty being a crime, it is justly punished by hard labour, coercion and imprisonment.—Candid reader, is this "Merry England"?

This, however, is but a description of the pastoral life enjoyed in this happy land. Extend your excursions to the towns, the manufactories —source of England's wealth, prosperity, and superiority—see the emaciated infants, victims alike of the protracted hours of toil and of premature depravity—the sickly artizans, whose physical strength is not more impaired by their unwholesome labours, than are their minds by the habitual indulgence of every vice in all its hideous varieties.

Again, candid reader, is this "Merry England?" Let us turn from the frightful scene; no research, no compilations from the traveller's or the historian's page, are necessary to show, to those who judge from the evidence of facts, and not from received opinions, that "Merry England," in the nineteenth century, is a decided misnomer.

But I shall be told, that even granting this be true, it is but the effects of temporary d stress; that the usual and habitual merriment this merry land, however it may be at prese suffering under a momentary eclipse, shone for [illegible] times with dazzling lustre: a [illegible] brilliant days of England's glory, t [illegible] our Virgin Queen, of our saint [illegible] golden days of good Queen Bes [illegible] days to which Englishmen migh [illegible] with proud recollection [illegible] England, "Merry England." [illegible] not attempt to throw a [illegible] boast of an English

[illegible] believe, with age: at [illegible] particular case. [illegible] this and much [illegible] silenced, but by [illegible] a full solution [illegible] alone, but

chiefly to original documents. The following pages are the result of my researches.

Courteous reader, should your patience fail you not, should you accomplish the wearisome task of perusing them, and should you still survive the toil, be, I entreat you, but as candid as you are courteous, and vouchsafe me then a plain answer to a simple question. In the sixteenth, any more than in the nineteenth century, had England indeed any claim to the title of "Merry England?" Is not the Englishman's boast, respecting the one and the other, equally founded on his invincible pride and prejudice, and does not the following narrative prove, that also in those "golden days," the title was then, as now, a decided misnomer?

Merrye Englaunde.

Some years ago, I was requested by a friend of my early youth to accompany him and his family into Cornwall, where they were repairing to take possession of a newly acquired mansion and estate. William Elliott had spent most part of his youth, pursuing a successful career in India, and ample wealth had rewarded his talents and exertions.

To finish the education of two lovely daughters, to whom, by the death of his wife, he found himself the only parent, and to enjoy his well-acquired fortune in his native land, he had returned to England, and soon after became the purchaser of the estate which he now proposed for the first time to visit.

Descended from a noble family, he had been anxious to possess himself of a mansion, which might appear like the inheritance of an ancient

race. Elliott had a horror of being ranked with upstarts whose newly acquired Indian wealth leads them to the ostentatious display of recently erected residences, the very exterior of which bespeak eastern magnificence. His ambition was to lose the nabob in the English country gentleman, and this feeling directed him in the purchase of Trewardreth Manor, long the seat of one of the oldest families in Cornwall. Attachment to the royal cause in the civil wars had diminished the paternal property, until the last surviving representative of the Traceys, having staked his all on the falling fortunes of the Stuarts, followed his royal master to France, and died at St. Germains: thus terminated a noble but ill-fated race.

The mansion and estates were confiscated: repurchased from the crown, they had successively passed into the hands of various owners; the house had, however, never been inhabited since the ominous day on which Hubert de Tracey had repaired to join the standard of King James, the day preceding the fatal field of Aughrim. I had given my friend and his daughters a rendezvous at Launceston. From thence, proceeding a few miles along the high

road, after passing for some way along a line of ruined wall, we turned into a dilapidated entrance flanked by massive stone piers; the carriage proceeding with difficulty upon the broken track of road which led through wild wooded scenery, bordered on either side by some magnificent oaks which had escaped the axe, and which once had evidently formed an avenue. Aged thorns and the scathed branches of a few lofty trees towering above tangled masses of copse wood and bramble, in scattered groups occasionally shut in the path, or at intervals admitted the view of an extensive inclosure, apparently once the park or chase belonging to the mansion. The way, however, becoming at every step more rough and unsafe for a carriage, we alighted, and a short walk brought us in front of a massive gate-house, flanked by four hexagonal stone towers, pierced, as well as the curtain which united them over the archway, with mullioned windows, composed of two or more flat-pointed arches, within an horizontal moulding of stone; the four towers terminating in leaden domes, once surmounted with gilded vanes, one only of which remained. The rusty iron gates were off their hinges, and lying prostrate amid the rank

grass at the foot of the building, and in the centre of the decorations that surmounted them a massive and richly wrought iron work, appeared the Tracey crest, which had remained until a gauntleted hand brandishing a scimitar, with the device "*Indomptable et serai*"—awarded by our second Henry on the fields of Palestine to Reginald de Tracey, who carried a long-fought day by capturing the Turkish chief, and seizing his scimitar, flew with it to the royal tent, and laid it at the feet of the king; but the motto spoke a forcible and mournful lesson to human pride and ambition. The conquering Reginald did not foresee that his posterity would falsify the proud boast of the device, and that poverty and misfortune would effect the overthrow of a family, which he deemed would be as invincible as himself. Passing under the groined roof of the gate-house archway, we entered a grass-grown court, bounded to the right and left by a dilapidated low wall, headed by a pierced stone balustrade; and opposite to us appeared the venerable mansion, its irregular

ed front, its ornamented gables, richly

iel and bay windows, and its massive

ded by a low arch, flanked by

stone columns, presenting a beautiful and interesting specimen of the style of architecture now known by the appellation of Tudor. The space between the top of the arched portal and the moulding of the oriel above it, was filled with arabesque decoration in stone, encircling the noble quarterings of the Traceys, and the armed hand and motto; above the shield appeared the date 1560. A square tower of a much older period than the rest of the building was attached to its eastern angle, and rose many feet above the roof, pierced with arched windows, the semicircular tops of which were richly embellished with the zig-zagged, or billetted ornament of that style of arhitecture, denominated Saxon or Norman: its ponderous form, and air of extreme and venerable antiquity, contrasted well with the highly adorned arabesques of the portal, and the richly ornamented high and slender chimneys of the mansion; and it stood a remnant of feudal ages, frowning defiance to the injuries of time.

"You have," said I to my friend Elliott, who was proudly, and with a master's eye, surveying the noble structure, "you have indeed been fortunate in finding a residence so consonai

your wishes and taste, and which so evidently bespeaks ancient origin, ancient tenure, and genuine old English aristocratic possession." But my friend's eye had caught the device, "*Indomptable et serai*," repeated he, "and yet they are fallen! become extinct in exile! their fair domains become the property of strangers! how then can one feel the pride of possession, while so forcibly reminded of the uncertain duration of all human prospects!" He was diverted from a subject which threatened a train of melancholy reflections, by the reappearance of his daughters—with youthful impatience, they had on our arrival, bounded through the porch, and now returned to tell of the wonders they had seen, and to urge us to enter the mansion, to share their pleasure and admiration.

The portal led into a spacious hall. The walls were hung with stupendous antlers of deer, and trophies of helmets, morions, breast-plates, tilting spears, shields, swords of various forms and sizes, horse armour and matchlocks, disposed in various patterns and devices. A curiously carved oaken gallery ran round three sides of the hall, and across a large bay window that reached to the ceiling. Opposite the porch,

an arch of large dimensions, under which still lay the massively decorated dogs, exhibited a fire place calculated to hold the gigantic Yule Clog; the large wooden block that fed the blazing fire at the merry Christmas of the olden time. At the side of this was the low door leading to the buttery-hatch; curiously carved oaken chairs lay on the pavement, deprived of legs, and broken, and the old table still marked for the game of shuffleboard, leant in a crippled state against the wall; these disabled pieces of furniture Elliott promised himself much gratification in restoring. "But the gallery you have not yet seen, that is the most beautiful of all!" exclaimed our young companions, as they swiftly preceded us up the wide staircase, the oaken balustrades of which, carved like the gallery round the hall, were surmounted with armed figures. Arrived at the top, a lengthened vista presented itself, running at right angles with the hall, apparently including the whole of one of the fronts of the house: carved oaken wainscotting was partly covered with old tapestry, and partly with pictures, most of which were tattered and dropping out of their tarnished frames. The walls of this part of the building

were of great thickness; the windows, high and wide, were placed in deep recesses, admitting on one side a view of the quadrangle, round which the house was built; on the other commanding the pleasaunce or garden. The descent to this was from a noble terrace which ran the length of the house, and was bordered by the fragments of a stone balustrade; a wide flight of broken steps led down into what was now a wilderness, but where strait rows of yew and box shewed, though the trees had lost all symmetry in luxuriant shoots, that the pleasaunce had once been divided by clipt hedges into equal compartments. A circular piece of water, hardly discernible for the aquatic plants that covered its surface, occupied the centre; a mutilated triton still bestrode a headless dolphin, and from the now shivered fragments of a shell, seemed still endeavouring to spout forth a stream to replenish the stagnant pool.

Among the few pictures that were still discernible on the walls of the gallery, two of large size on pannel, containing full length figures, attracted our attention, as they hung on each side of the great centre oriel window. The first we inspected represented a young man dressed

in a black vest pinked with white, black cloak, purple hose, flowered belt, cap and feather, seated, with his left elbow resting on a folio that lay on a carpet covered table: in his right hand he held that of a beautiful female seated next to him, dressed in white pinked with red, jewels and a short white feather in her hair, a long carkanet of precious stones pendant from her neck, a ruff and farthingale. A female, rather more advanced in years, stood near them, drest in a black cap, with a point descending on the forehead, richly adorned with pearls, as well as the stomacher of her black velvet dress, a long black veil, ruff and farthingale, holding in her hand a feather fan. The young man's features exhibited Grecian regularity, united with an expression of chivalric and lofty resolution; his dark eyes beamed with genius, and his short upper lip seemed to smile in philsophic scorn at the world he despised. Under his feet we discovered the inscription—

Fraunċis Tregiaune Armigr.
A.D. m.d.lxxbi.

At the feet of the elder lady was written—

Ann, Daur. to Edwarde, iii Earle of Derbye,
marryde i to Chas. bii Lorde Stourtone,
ii to Syr Johnn Arundell of
Chydioke, Knt. Co.
Dorsett.

Below the younger female, we decyphered—

Marye, Daur. to Chas. bii Lorde Stourtone
and Ann his wyffe, marryedd to
Frauncis Tregiaune Armigr.

Her beauty was dignified and commanding, the dark arched brow denoted an unbending spirit, formed to meet adversity, whilst the placidity of her countenance indicated the patient resignation of the Christian, united with the fortitude of the heroine.

The other picture represented a lady in the prime of life, surrounded by a group of lovely children playing with a small ape, which she held by a silver chain. At her feet was written,

Katharine, daughter to Syr Eustace de
Greenbile, Knt. wyffe to Syr
Hubert de Tracey, Knt.
A.D. m.d.lxxbi.

The cheerful expression of her beautiful countenance seemed formed to throw a sunny beam of gladness across the darkest path of destiny; whilst firmness and resolution marked the lines of her brow, and decision, not unmixed with haughtiness, beamed in her eye. She was habited in a dress of green velvet and a farthingale, a white laced cap bent down on the forehead; at the back of it was fastened a transparent white veil edged with lace, which fell over the shoulders and descended below the waist; round her neck was suspended to a black silken cord, a jewel, with a large pendant pearl; a high lace ruff open in front, with deep cuffs at her wrists of the same material. A gentleman apparently of her own age was seen advancing towards her, dressed in a white quilted satin doublet, striped with gold lace, an embroidered falling collar, black hose, and high large boots with massive gilt spurs, a short rapier suspended by a worked gold belt round his waist; his left hand was extended as if in the act of bidding his lady adieu, previous to his engaging in the chase; on his right hand perched an hooded hawk, and a small white curly dog fawned upon him, as if striving to obtain his master's caresses. The features of

this gentlemen represented the perfection of manly beauty: mild yet commanding, his fair open forehead, the high arched eyebrows, denoted intellect, candour, dignity and honourable feeling, whilst the full large blue eye spoke peace of mind, kindness and affection; a being born to love and to be loved; the aquiline nose, beautifully turned mouth and chin, and the full formed throat, were models for a sculptor. The inscription beneath was—

Syr Hubert de Tracey, Knt. of Trewardrethe, Co. Cornewayle.

The back ground of the picture represented the old manor-house, in front of which stood attendants with horses and dogs, apparently waiting for their master.

After some time spent in the inspection of these interesting portraits, we proceeded beyond the gallery, and, at right angles with it, to a spacious room hung with gilt leather, which led into another decorated with old tapestry. These apartments had been rendered habitable, by the servants sent down by Elliott to make preparations for his arrival; and the autumnal evening becoming chill, huge logs of wood were lighted in

the wide extended fire-place: we assembled round the cheerful blaze, and spent the remainder of the day in making plans for furnishing and repairing the mansion in a manner suitable to its antiquity, and to restore the clipt hedges of the pleasaunce, the triton fountain and the embroidered parterre.

We met next morning, impatient to conclude our survey of the interesting building, and commenced by the gallery. My friend's taste for the arts had urged him to direct the pictures that had attracted us the evening before, to be taken down, with other portraits, chiefly of the Traceys, which were, on inspection, found to be capable of repair. Elliott and I were instantly occupied in tracing the generations of the family, from the *Syr Reginald* by Holbein, in his velvet cap, the jewel and single feather, the close ruff and massive gold chain, who followed in King Henry's train to the *Champ de Drap d'Or*, and the fine Vandyke representing Sir Gilbert, who fell at the battle of Newbury, down to the flowing periwig and fluttering drapery of the last Sir Hubert, and the last of his race, whose mortal remains reposed in the abbaye at St. Germains; but further research was interrupted by

a loud exclamation from the sprightly Elinor, my friend's youngest daughter, who had in a few moments traversed every part of the gallery, and having lifted up a piece of tapestry, instantly disappeared behind it, followed by her sister Henrietta. We lost no time in pursuing them, and found that the tapestry had concealed a small door, which had been torn from its hinges, and lay on the floor of a room within. On examining and placing it upright, we found it fitting so exactly into the wainscotting, as not to be perceptible when closed; a spring placed in a knot of the wood had evidently been the only means of opening it. The room was entirely dark, but a door beyond opened to a narrow and imperfectly lighted stair, which our young companions had already descended. We found, on following them, that it led into two or three small cells, opening one from another, one sufficiently large to contain four or five persons, the others so small as with difficulty to admit one. Most of these were dark when closed; the large one only received light from small chinks, which seemed to have been made with design, and, on our afterwards inspecting the exterior of the house, they appeared to be crevices be-

tween the stones, so slightly enlarged as not to be perceived. The cells were, evidently, all, as well as the stair, cut in the thickness of the wall with great ingenuity. In two of them were the remains of truckle bedsteads; in all were worm-eaten benches and stools.

While the youthful sisters were rapidly recalling every fearful recital supplied to them by an assiduous course of novel reading, of mysterious dungeons and princely captives, my friend and I, who had long passed the age of romance, were more soberly conjecturing that these cells must have been the hiding holes, often found in old houses, used as places of concealment during the more heavy pressure of the Penal Laws, by those who still adhered to the ancient faith; and the Traceys had always been of that number. But the air in these confined places being close and unwholesome, we induced the sisters to return with us to the gallery, loudly expressing their hopes that some romantic discovery would still be made in what they persevered in thinking the scene of captivity and of a tyrant-baron's wrath. We now pursued our course up the great staircase, to a floor above that of the gallery, and in the ancient Norman

tower a lady's bower was found, commanding such lovely views from its high narrow windows; on one side, of different glades of the park; from the other, as it were a map of the terrace and pleasaunce—dismantled and unfurnished even as it was, Henrietta and Elinor were so enraptured with it, that they besought their father to allow them to furnish and appropriate it to their own use. Enchanted with the consent he gave, they resolved to dedicate that evening to designing appropriate furniture and ornaments, for what was to be in future their favourite boudoir. In the centre pannel of the tapestried sitting-room were shelves, on which Elliott proposed to arrange some books and collections of drawings which he had brought to aid his daughters' consultation. As the servants were placing them, some of the shelves appeared less firm than the others: the head of a nail projected from the edge of one of them; in trying whether the shelf would bear a weighty portfolio, the nail was pressed by accident, the whole pannel flew back, disclosing a very narrow winding passage, which led to a small cell constructed behind the chimney of the sitting-room, while steps led down to another cell, very small

and low, and where the intense heat of the ceiling betrayed its situation to be immediately under the hearth-stone of the fire-place in the tapestried room above. Several of the servants being present at this scrutiny, no small degree of curiosity was evidently raised amongst them, and it seemed probable that they intended in future to share in the spirit of discovery which pervaded us all.

During our breakfast next morning, a servant ran into the room with the tidings that farther mysteries had come to light. On ascending the staircase, two of the steps were, he fancied, unsteady; after a persevering search, a small bolt was found under the moulding of the upper step; on its being withdrawn the steps lifted up, but the aperture they disclosed was dark, and the man had evidently not had courage to pursue the adventure. Elliott and I repaired to the spot with lighted candles. The cell seemed very small, and was nearly filled by a pile apparently of hangings or furniture, which, on being extracted, proved to be velvet and silk ornaments covered with gold lace and embroidery, adapted to the service of the Catholic Church; also a few volumes, some exquisitely illuminat-

ed, others being curious specimens of early typography. Among them was found—

'The Debellacion of Salem and Byzance,' and 'A Dialogue of Comfortte agenste Tribulacion, by Sr. Thos. More'; 'The Lyf of St. Katherine of Sene, wth y^{e} Reuelation of Saynt Elysabeth the Kynges Doughter of Hungarye.' Prynted by W. Caxton.

'Speculum Vitæ Christi; or the Myrroure of the blessyd Lyff of Jesu Christe. Emprynted by mee, Wyllyam Caxton.'

'Directorium Sacerdotum; sive Ordinal secundum Usum Sarum, una cum Defensoris ejusdem Directorii, item Tractatus qui dicitur Credi Michi Caxton me fieri fecit.'

'A Boke composed of Diverse Ghostlie Matteres. The seconde Tretyse in thys Boke shewethe xij prouffytes of Tribulacions. The thyrde shewethe the holye Rule of Saynt Benet. Emprynted at Westmynstre by desyring of certeyne worshipfulle persones. Wylhelmus Caxton.'

'The Goldene Legende—"Thus endeth the legende named in latin, Legenda Aurea. Which werke I dyd accomplyssh at the comaundiment and requeste of the Noble and Puyssante erle

and my specyall good lorde Wyllyam erle of Arondel—And now have renewed and fynysshed it at Westmestre the xx daie of Maie. The yere of oure Lord m.cccclxxxxiii. And in the VIII yere of the reygne of kynge Henry the VII, by mee Wyllyam Caxton."'

'Dives and Pauper. fynysshed the iij daye of decembre The yere of our lorde godde m.ccc. lxxxxvj. Emprynted by me Wyken de worde. Westmonstre. Deo gracias.'

'Constitutione provinciales ecclesie Anglicani, fecit Wilhelmum Lynderrode. Impressum apud Westmonasterium per me Wynandu de Worde. Anno Dni. m.ccccc.lbii. Impressus in civitate London. VVinandum de Worde, comorante in vico vulgariter nuncupato de Flete Strete. Anni Dne.m.ccccclii.'

'Ordinale Sarum, sive Directorum Sacerdotum, per me Wonnadum de Worde. Ann.Dni. m.ccccciiii.'

'The Parlyament of Deuylles.' (At the end) 'Pryntere unto the most excellent pryncesse my ladye the kynges mother. m.ccccc.'

'The holye Lyfe of Saynt Werburge, very frutefull for all christen people to rede. Imprynted by Richard Pynson, prynter to ye

kynges noble grace, w^th^ priuilege to hym graunted by our souerayne lord the kynge. A.M. D.xxi.'

'Breuiarum Secundum usum Sarum. Richarde Pynson.'

'The Lyfe of the gloryous Vyrgyne and Martyr Saynt Barbara. Imprynted in London by me Julyan Notary, dwellynge in Poules chirch yarde, besyde my lorde of Londons palayce, at y^e^ Signe of the three Kynges.'

'Processionale ad usum Ecclesie Sarum, sumptibus et compensis honesti viri Johannis Raynal. M.CCCCC.XXXX.'

'A Boke newly translated out of Latyn into Englyshe, called the followinge of Christe; with the Golden Epistel of Saynt Bernarde. After the iii bokes followeth the iiii boke, whiche was fyrst translated out of the Frenche into Englyshe by the ryghte noble and excellente prynces Margarete late Countesse of Riche Mounte.'

With the books we also found an iron embossed casket, in which were several richly worked silver and gilt chalices, and other articles of church plate; on most of them engraven the crest and arms of the Traceys.

For several days after this interesting discovery

nothing had power to occupy the inhabitants of the old Manor House, but endeavours to pursue their researches farther; all efforts, however, were fruitless; and at last it was unanimously agreed, that all the mysteries of Trewardreth had been fathomed, and all its places of concealment discovered. I had intended to have remained the autumn with my friend; but to my disappointment I was summoned to attend the deathbed of a relation, by whose demise I inherited a West Indian estate which required an immediate visit. Vexatious litigations detained me in Jamaica nearly two years. During the first months of my residence there, frequent letters from Elliott were filled with descriptions of the repairs, furniture and embellishments of the old Manor House, to which the family were daily becoming more attached. But suddenly these communications ceased, nor could my frequent inquiries obtain any answer. At last, enabled to return to England, my first care was to endeavour to procure information respecting my friends. What was my disappointment to hear that they had left the residence they appeared to like so much, in little more than a year after they had taken possession of it. The

elder sister had married, and had gone abroad with her husband, accompanied by the once sprightly Elinor, on whose spirits there seemed to hang some mysterious cloud. No cause was assigned for it, but melancholy and gloom had depressed the vivacity once so buoyant; her health had suffered, and change of scene and air were recommended. Elliott too himself only waited till the sale of Trewardreth Manor was completed, when he intended to join his daughters on the continent. Shortly afterwards I met him in London; he spoke in the most melancholy strain of the alteration in his plans, but seemed to entertain every hope that his daughter's health would be restored, if change of scene could bring tranquillity to her mind, and if she could succeed in conquering the horrible impression connected with the mansion, which he so bitterly repented having purchased. Not to prolong a subject evidently painful I repressed my curiosity as to the cause of these sad changes; but as we conversed, Elliott's reserve wore off, and he expressed a wish to confide his cares to me, feeling sure of the sympathy the recital would create in the mind of his friend.

"We had," he said, "passed the winter after

you left us, with the greatest cheerfulness and enjoyment at Trewardreth. The return of spring and summer added fresh beauties to the abode, to which we had already become extremely attached. As the autumn advanced, a large party had assembled for the sports of the season, at the house of a neighbouring gentleman, and a ball was given to the surrounding gentry. I accompanied my daughters, all animation and enjoyment, to the scene of festivity; but habits of early hours induced us to retire long before the party had begun to disperse, and we returned home soon after midnight. The moon shone brightly on the turretted front of the mansion: 'How beautiful must the landscape appear by this light from the window of the old Norman tower!' exclaimed Elinor; 'I must enjoy it for some moments, before I retire to rest for the night.' She flew up the staircase, followed by her sister, and as they did not return, in a short time I followed to remonstrate on the imprudence of remaining in the chilling atmosphere of the turret, when loud and repeated shrieks, apparently in that direction, urged me to proceed with the utmost rapidity. I found my poor Elinor extended on the ground,

her sister too much terrified to be able to raise her. In an instant I had conveyed my daughter to her chamber, summoned attendants, and proper restoratives brought back animation; but frightful convulsions shook her frame. Medical aid was called in; and after many hours of anxiety, I had the satisfaction of finding my child in a state of comparative tranquillity; but the slightest noise threw her into paroxysms of the utmost terror, and she would hide her eyes, as if dreading to encounter some horrid spectacle. Her sister told me that Elinor evidently had seen, or fancied she had seen, some alarming appearance in the tower. Henrietta was descending the stairs, and not hearing her sister follow, had called her, but received no answer; after a short pause she called her again, and was answer- by a tremendous shriek; she was immediately by her sister's side, who had fallen, and she then shrieked herself for assistance. After some days Elinor expressed a wish to speak to her sister and myself, though she appeared to dread the conference. I wished her to defer it till she had gained more strength; but she assured me that, having once made the effort, she should feel relieved by having confided to us the mystery

that pressed upon her mind. I told her that I had no doubt that I should be able to explain the cause of the appearance that had alarmed her.

"'Impossible,' said she, 'nothing can convince me that what I saw was not supernatural. I have hesitated, from the fear that you and my sister should think me a credulous visionary. But I ought not to yield to this idea; from your indulgence I have no ridicule to fear; and it would be wrong not to place entire confidence in you. Besides I have a boon to ask, when my story is told, which,' said she with eager agitation, 'you must not withhold.' I promised to grant everything that would tranquillize her mind; and with a tremor of terror, but an appearance of entire conviction as to what she related—'I was,' said she, 'gazing through the window at the landscape, when my sister left the room. I turned to follow her, when a tall figure seemed to rise out of the floor, shadowy—seen as through a mist, and as if surrounded by a thin bright halo of vapour—but sufficiently distinct for me to observe a long pale visage, the aspect commanding, venerable, and exhibiting more than human placidity; the large

PRINTED AT ST. PAUL'S PRESS, PRIOR PARK, BY W. MU

fined the garment round the body; it mouldered as I touched it; and a black wooden rosary, which had been suspended from the waist, fell to the ground. After gazing at these remains of mortality, left to decay forgotten and neglected, with a feeling of awe which caused a momentary suspension of every faculty, I was aroused by the voices of the servants, alarmed at my silence, and slowly venturing to descend in search of me. I gathered up the manuscripts and volume from the table, hoping to find in them some clue to the dreadful discovery I had made, and hastily reascended to the room above. Eagerly questioned by Elinor, I attempted to evade the truth, but my horrified looks betrayed to her that books and papers had not been the only result of my researches, and all caution was rendered useless by the terrified exclamations of the servants, who, unperceived by me, had, in a body, gained courage to descend into the cell. From them she learnt the truth, and from that moment neither herself nor her sister could endure to remain at Trewardreth, now in their eyes the scene of captivity and midnight murder. At their earnest entreaty I sent them immediately to the house of a neighbouring friend,

remaining myself to make arrangements for leaving the house, and to see that my orders for the decent interment of the remains I had found in the cell, had been properly executed: but Elinor's health and spirits daily declined. Not even the happy marriage of her sister, in which at any other time she would have taken so lively an interest, had any effect in restoring her peace of mind. I therefore eagerly embraced the proposal of Henrietta and her husband, that she should accompany them to Italy, and in a few days I hope to join them. I examined the books and papers found in the cell. The volume consisted of psalms and scriptural lessons in Latin, apparently forming an office for daily recitation. Some of the MSS., in different handwritings, were letters, chiefly containing curious accounts of the escapes and perils attending on those among the Catholic priesthood, who ventured, after a foreign education, to return to their native country, for the purpose of affording religious aid to those who still adhered to that faith: they are all dated towards the end of the sixteenth century; and their cramped and nearly obliterated characters have proved a difficult task to decypher. Several bearing the

signatures of Gerrard, Mayne, Gennings, Campion and Cornelius, present curious matter for the antiquary, and throw much light on the severity of the Penal Code in that age. But what interested me the most, was an unfinished diary, apparently written by the unfortunate individual whose remains I had found, and which seems to explain their having been left to decay, unburied and forgotten. Being versed in reading ancient documents, the writing will prove no difficulty to you; and you will, I think, be interested in the perusal of the MSS. which I shall send you when I leave England."

In a few days a letter announced to me that Elliott had embarked for Calais, and a packet accompanied it, containing the promised MSS. I instantly searched for the diary, and found a number of sheets fastened together, in some places much injured and defaced by damp, but which, in the broken narrative, presented the following melancholy clue to the awful discovery in the *mysterious cells of Trewardreth.*

In the moneth of Februarie, A.D. m.v. lxxbii. this being Caundlemasse daie, I came to the castell of Chidioke, where dwelledd that ryghte worthie Knyghte, Syr Johnn Arundell, and his vertuouse Ladie, thear to say Masse, but in greate peryll for verie feare of the searchers, who have ofte tymes menacedd thys castell, moche doubtinge there sholde be founde a Prieste; but somme daies havynge passed in moche tranquilitie, blessedd be Godde! I have venturedd forthe secretlie to visitte ye manie piouse soules who lye hiddene aboute, in theese partes.

Ye iv. daie of Marche.—The ryghte worshipfulle Maister Frauncis Tregiaun came to the castell, journeyinge to Londonne, for that he wolde be fayne to do the obeisaunce of a loyalle subjecte to hyr gracious Majestie the Queene, holdinge now hyr courte at Greenwiche. His rare discowrse and valiaunte bearing make him specialle welcomm. My ladye dothe pleasantlie chide him for that hee dyd not bryngе her fayre dawghtere the ladie hys wyffe, whom he has leffte in Cornewayle, beinge a most discreete

gentelwommann, to y^e^ ende that shee myghte, in Maister Tregiaun hys absence, see to y^e^ welfayre of hys affayrs. Hee communeth moche wythe mee as to y^e^ difficoltye of fyndinge priestes to do the mynistrie, and forasmoche as I came into theese parttes onlie y^e^ whiles my verye goode friende Father Cornelius colde arrange matters wyth hys superiors beyonde seas, I am nothing lothe to betake me, at hys returne, to do y^e^ beheste of Maister Tregiaun, who willeth that I sholde worke in the spirytualle vineyarde, at the house of one Syr Huberte Tracie, a near kinsmanne of hys, abydinge within smalle distaunce of hys seate in Cornewayle.

Y^e^ ix. daie of Marche.—To adde to our laments at y^e^ losse of Maister Tregiaun, hee had not departedd manie hours, when sondrie knaves that toiled in y^e^ fieldes ranne in with y^e^ alarme that a bodie of men were seen ryding acrosse the countrie as towardes the castell, y^e^ which betidedd noe goode, but manyfolde harme, for that thei sholde be y^e^ searchers abrode. Towardes nyghtefalle, y^e^ castell is sore besett by an hondrede armedd men or more, but at y^e^ firste alarme wee hadd stowedd

al y^e^ church plate and ornamentes in a verie secrete place in y^e^ roofe; y^e^ whiles, for greater securytie, Syr Johnn, openinge a doore, made wythe soche soteltye in y^e^ wainscottinge of y^e^ gallerie that it myghte not bee discoveredd unlesse it was knowne how to touch y^e^ secrete springe, we enteredd a small and neerely darkenedd chambere; when I colde see more clearlye, I percievedd preparatioun for my sojournment; a bedd was in one corner, and on a smalle table somm maunchett breddes and a stoupe of wyne. Syr Johnne bade me bee of goode cheere, and in no wyse to leave this my hydinge place tyll al alarme is endedd.

Through a smal crevysse in y^e^ walle I colde ryghte welle discerne the arraye with which y^e^ searchers approchedd y^e^ castell, circumventinge yt on al sydes, as though it were a besiegedd fortresse; some on foote, some on horses, al wel armedd. Within a short space yonge Edmonde Stanleye, mye ladye's orphanne nephewe, who abydeth here, beynge bredd at hyr castell, adventuredd into my Celle, advertysynge me that sondrie retainers of Syr Johnn's came in on the alarme, fynding that for myles arounde the hyghe waies were guardedd; al

were examinedd that were passynge onwardes towardes y^e^ castell; and now moche noyse is hearde in y^e^ halle. I put forthe y^e^ stryplynge, closyng mye doore ryght carefullie; presentlye y^e^ searchers wyth moche rudenesse of speeche, traversynge y^e^ buildinge, breake openn doores wyth al violence, as if thei were to sacke a towne of enemyes wonne bye y^e^ sworde.—Thys is a straunge proceedinge, and propere onlie to our persecuted state at this tyme, for it is not usedd elswhere: nowe poursuivantes runne up stayres, y^e^ faire large doore of y^e^ gallerie is closedd; its daintye pannellinge of rare wooddes and ivorye doe thei breake wyth theyr swordes, but fyndyng naughte that thei lookedd for, theyr rage waxedd stronge, and brake forthe in horryd othes and blasphemous cursinges, dreadfulle to heere; and thei ascendedd to y^e^ roofe: but traversyng yt in al directions, I heardd to my greate discomforte a shoute of joy, for that thei hadd lyghted on y^e^ secrette place where was hiddenn, as wee vainlie hopedd, al y^e^ church-stuffe and vesselles of silvere and goulde: thenn was theyre triumphe amonge theese wickedd spoylers for that thei hadd founde soche a treasure, and that yt gave them

suretie that ye priest should be found lykewyse; thei quicklie descended to ye halle, dragginge after themm theyr spoyle wyth rude triumphe, and rybaldrie of jestinge; and in a breefe space Edmonde returnedd, for that thei beeinge at theyr feastynge, he coulde escape unseene. Syr Johnn and my ladie were guardedd in ye easterne towere, ye womenn and retainers in ye gate-house under a guarde, so none mighte hinder ye proceedings of theese invaders; thei hadd now brokenne openn ye butterie-hatch, helpinge themselves to ye daintye pastyes preparedd for Syr Johnn hys table. Ye cellar they had rifledd, emptying faste ye buttes of wyne, which thei dranke out of silvere flaggons, most unmeete for ye mouthes of such unmannerlie villeyns, and with profayne jestynges, dividyng ye riche goulde and silvere stuffes thei hadd founde, and pledginge others helthes, sacrilegiouslie drynkynge forthe from ye sacred vesselles. Alacke! that such doinges sholde bee in a Xtian lande! Theyr waissaile now lasteth so longe, methinkes thei wille not pursue further searche thys nyghte, for it waxeth darke. Edmonde has secretlie watchedd themm, and returnes to saie theyr bee manie sleepinge rounde

ye hall fyer, but that ye guardde is noe waie relaxedd, for that thei do take it by turnes; so commendynge myselfe and oure goode cause to Godde hys protection, I hie me to my strawe bedde with moche feelinge of suretie in hys Almitie care.

Thys x. daie.—Ye dawne hadd scarcelie commenced, when noyses under ye walles of mye celle awakenedd me, and through ye crevisse I colde discerne theese lawlesse menn admeasuringe ye walles of ye castell without. Severall then of them ascendedd to ye gallerie, then admeasuringge ye wainscotting wythin. "Of a suretie," said thei, "theyre is here thicknesse sufficient for that some cursedd prieste maye abide concealedd." Then searchedd thei for ye doore, but fynding none, theyre choler arose. I hearde a clatter of swordes, and, standing neere unto ye wall, lystinge to theyre proceedinges, ye sworde of one hadd welle nighe transfixedd me, as thei pushedd them throughe ye wainscottinge, hopinge, as thei saidd with manie othes, yf thei colde no waies finde ye Popishe hounde, to sticke hym yn his kennelle. At diverse tymes through this daie have thei re-

newedd theyre attemptes. Ye sottele young knave Edmonde, whiles thei busied themselves yn ye butterie-hatche, ranne to me with as moche of provisiones as hee colde carrye, wherewith to stande ye siedge, for that thei seemedd to be resolvedd to occupie ye castell, in hopes of anie that were concealedd beinge starved oute. And nowe I heere them returne to ye gallerie, and sett a guarde of severall, charging them in no wise to lett anie passe, and sholde thei heere anie noyse, to appryze ye rest. Thys guarde is relievedd throughout ye daie by tymes, and oft tymes duringe ye nighte.

Thys xi. daie.—Ye guarde continues as before.

Thys xii. daie.—Ye guarde, by theyre talke, seeme enclininge to be wearie of thys bootlesse watchinge. Towardes noone, by reasonn of a rheume I have caught by ye colde of ye cell, I coughed, and thei hearinge it, thei renewedd their attemptes, but al in vaine: fallinge asleepe at nyghte, I breathedd harde, and was awakened by theyre consultatiouns respecting ye meanes to entrappe me forthe from my concealmente, for that thei heardd me breathe.

Thys xiii. daie.—Ye guardde towardes midde daie seeme to departt, but fearinge to truste them, I remaine quiett; then sondrie of them returne and knocke ye walles, talkinge as yf thei were some of ye familye, saying, "Come forthe, for thankes bee to Godde ye searchers are departedd." Thys soteltye is usualle to them: I therefore styrr'd not, for yt is not soe moche for mine own peryll shold I be discoveredd, but that ye goodes and lives of the families are forfeittedd if that a prieste be found within theyre dwellynge.

Thys xiv. daie.—And now theyre patiaunce faileth them, and, as in revenge, thei proceede al thorough ye mansionn, riflinge and despoilinge al thei colde laie haunds on; thei brake ye massive cabinettes and cupboardes, tearinge downe ye arras and faire tapestried hanginges.

Thys xv. daie.—My store of provisions were totallie consumedd since yesternighte, nor have I founde it an easie taske to husbande them so longe, and the boye Edmonde, for verie feare, no doubt, has not adventured near me; in so moche that with ye colde and lacke of victualles,

and ye cramped state of my limbes, having been sixe daies in thys straitenedde chamber, I finde my strengthe faile me greatlie.

Thys xvi. daie.—The sadde havock continueth, soone wyll this goodlie mansionn be utterlie distroyedd; towardes noone thei repaire to ye halle to devide theyre spoiles; meanwhile Edmonde askes admittaunce at mye doore, and tells mee that hee has been a prisoner in ye gate house with ye others, but hadd let himselfe downe fromme ye roofe, and so escaping and hidinge himselfe in a caske in ye butterie hatche, had hearde ye searchers express moche discontente, for that ye priest was in no wise to be founde; but that next daie, him whom thei callede Walsinghame hys ryghte haund, wolde comme, and noe doubte ferret out thys wylie Prieste: forasmoche as none were clever like him in discoveringe ye secrete places of concealment. Edmonde, therefore, pressed me moche to endeavour to escape, and that colde I, after nyghte-falle, gaine the pleasaunce, ye walle was not so hyghe but that wyth a corde which he hadd stolene I mighte climbe it, and the moate was not deepe, but that it colde be forded.

Leaving me a frugall meale wych he had contryved to bringe, and havinge obtained my promiss that I wolde after darke make ye attempte, he lefte mee to discover, with what cunninge he colde, ye best means of gaininge ye pleasaunce.

This xxv. daie.—Praisedd be Godde, I am at lengthe in safetie at Launceston, but the sore peryll that attended my escape from Chidioke, and ye fatigues of my journeie hythere, make it necessary that some daies be past in repose: during wych I will indite by what meanes Providence protected me. It was some tyme after nyghte falle, ere Edmonde colde returne to me, as manie amonge ye troope watchedd him: he then came with a darke lanterne, having with som difficultie conveyed two suites of cloathes, as worne by peasaunte menn, beyonde ye moate for oure dysguisynge, and a rope hee hadd securelie fastened to ye walle. Moche rude waissaile prevailed in ye halle, and ye soundes of riott assailed mine ears, as commending me to Godde hys care I left ye celle; but, on reachinge ye end of ye gallerie, to our utter confusionn we found ye doore fastenedd; nor woulde our utmoste effortes prevaile to openn it. After

some delaye ye onlie chaunce wee hadd was to go oute at ye other ende of ye gallerie, ye doore whereof was brokene by them, and so creepe down ye great staire, but so silentlie that none myghte heare in ye halle, one doore whereof openeth at ye staire foote. This we did, but scarcelie hadd wee descendedd when sondrie of ye revellers sodainely burste forthe. I hadd but juste tyme to turn my lanterne, and to ensconce myselfe under ye staire, for onne had neerly ranne agenste me. Thei soon as quicklie returnedd to their feastinge, and we, holding our breaths and creepinge, turnedd down ye passage that ledd towards ye courte; but at ye greate doore another troope was enteringe, so that we turnedd, and ryghte swiftlie ranne back. One saidd, "Who flies there?" and pursuedd us; others laffed, and said, "Robin hath seen ye deville, and seeketh him." We endeavoured by turninge downe a narrow passage to avoide him, for I colde not flye fast, and with moche discomfort reflected that thys ledd onlie to a smal chambere, where I muste be taken. He gained on mee every momente. I felt him touche my cassocke as I ranne, when in the ye darknesse hys foote caught in ye pavemente, and he felle. Leavinge him lyinge

there, I turned into the smal arras withdrawinge chamber, whence I knew that a turninge passage ledd alonge that syde of y^e^ castell, to a little posterne that openedd on y^e^ pleasaunce. After a shorte repose we were departinge, when a sodaine uproar arose in y^e^ halle. There seemed to be moche disputacion and noyse of wordes, and som ranne forthe, others pursueinge; to my discomfiture thei ranne towardes y^e^ withdrawing chamber. I turned y^e^ lanterne, and we quicklie concealedd ourselves behinde y^e^ arras: and now they enter, and lockynge y^e^ doore on y^e^ others, we finde ourselves constrained to remaine quiett, and awaite theyre departure, wyth what patience wee myghte. By theyre discourse thei seemed to have takenn a parte of y^e^ spoiles agenste y^e^ will of the others. Those outside with horrid othes swearinge thei wolde enter, and those withinn defyinge them. After moche time one lighted a matche strikinge fire. Then seeinge woodene logges in y^e^ chimney, thei lightedd them. Another had a flaske in his hande, thaye seatedd them arounde y^e^ fire and gan to drinke and utter profane jestinges and discoursinges, and I was wearyedde oute wyth y^e^ constrainedd posture I needes must be in; and

thus moche time passedd awaye till theye fell to sleepinge, and I hopedd to escape; but in movinge, I pushedd a chaire; whereat one startedd up and woke y^e^ others. Theye seemedd, however, to fear to see what it myghte bee. Robin, saidd one, hadd pursuedd some Will-o'-y^e^-wispe downe y^e^ passage, and presentlie was founde lying bleedinge and senselesse, soe I care not to fyghte with evile spirittes. Soone, however, thaie betake them agen to sleepe, and more carefullie we adventuredd forthe, and gained y^e^ windinge passage; but here agen we were foiledd, a guste of winde extinguishinge our lighte, and y^e^ turninges and wyndynges woefully misledd us; so moche tyme was therefore wastedd ere wee ryghte joyfullie reachedd y^e^ posterne, and as I openedd it daie was dawninge. I betooke me nathelesse to y^e^ walle, and Edmonde beinge lyghter, I counselled him to go y^e^ firste, y^e^ better to try y^e^ corde. But he hadd hardlye clearedd y^e^ walle whene I hearde mine enemyes aboute, and that some were entering y^e^ pleasaunce. In moche perplexitie I cast mine eies to see howe I colde escape; when where I stoode I discriedd a spade, and harde by a rustic doublette, no doubt of y^e^ knave that workedd there. Quick-

lie, then, throwinge mye cassocke and cappe over ye walle, I donned the doublette, and gan to digg. Manie of ye menn nowe enteredd, some quarrellinge, others jestinge; one willinge to passe a sorrye joke on mee, calledd mee papiste knave, and kickedd mee sharplie. Longe I thought it ere thei left ye pleasaunce. But a hastye summons from one who seemed thayre chiefe endedd theyr jestings, and no sooner dyd I finde myselfe alone, than I climbedd ye walle, reachedd ye toppe safelie, and lettinge myselfe warilie into ye moate, fordedd yt, and hartilye thankedd Godde when I was in securitie on ye othere side, and founde Edmonde in moche dismaye awaiting me. In greate haste I arrayedd myselfe in ye peasaunte's geare that hee hadd provydedd, he hadd already donned ye othere suite, and with what speede we colde we sette forthe acrosse ye fieldes. Thys nyghte we reachedd ye house of a discreete and virtuous Catholicke widowe, who next morninge wolde needes force mee to take moche provisionn in a baskette. Eighte daies passed, however, ere I colde arrive hither, as mye feete blisteredd with walkinge, and, passing five nyghtes shelteredd onlie by a tree, or in rude hovelles by the waie

that had causedd, or beene, as it were, y^e^ instromentt of thys soe sadd mischaunce. As sheriffe to y^e^ countie, he hadd, in companie wyth diverse gentlemenn, repayredd to Maister Tregiannes to search for a prieste. Entraunce was at y^e^ firste denyedd themm, whereas thaie hadd noe commissioune; but moche violence of threattes beinge usedd bye y^e^ sheriffe, y^e^ search commencedd, and Father Mayne was taken wyth moche opprobrious speeche, and straitewaies conveyedd, wyth Maister Tregian, Maister Tremayne hys kinnsmann, and sondrie hys servantes, to Truro, there to be examinedd by y^e^ bishoppe, who, at that seasonne, resydedd at a mansionn he possessedd harde by to y^e^ towne. Mistresse Tregian saidd, that thei longe hadd fearedd some mishappe, inasmoche as fromm some angrie passages that hadd been usedd by her Majestie y^e^ Queene, on y^e^ occasione of Maister Tregian hys visitte at y^e^ courte (he havinge given unknowne cause of displeasure), thaie myghte looke for some evil befallinge themm. Syr Johnn Arundell is alsoe caste into prisonne at Exeter.

Thys xviii. daie.— * *

* * by a ryghte trustie messenger, Mistress Tregian is apprisedd that hyr husbande, being founde to be a recusante, is constraynedd to give a bonde of two thousande poundes for hys appearance at y^e^ Assyzes.—Mistress Tregian therefore departedd to meete hym at theyre mansionn of Goldene.

Thys xx. daie of September.—Syr Johnne Arundell is releasedd from y^e^ Towere for lacke of evidaunces.

* * * *

Thys xxix. daie.—Syr Johnn Arundell and hys ladie, wyth theyre vertuous daughtere, Mistress Dorothye, arrive heere, journeyinge on theyre waye to Llanherne, hys mansioun-house. He sorroweth moche oure hartes yn recountinge hys harde treatmente in y^e^ prisoune * *

[*Several pages are here lost, and much difficulty occurred in deciphering the characters that the damp had nearly effaced.*) * *

Syr Hubert receavedd a missive from Maister Tregian, who wryteth to hym from Londone, whither hys prosecutors hadd contryvedd to have

hym taken, managing affayres so sottelie that an ordere came to have hym broughte before y^e^ Queene's privie councyll: he hadd longe beene kept straitlie confined untyll y^e^ councyll was disposedd to call hym before them. At hys examinacion he was charged wyth recusancie, of entertaininge personnes of suspected characters in hys familye, and of countenancinge superstitious practices. He had, he sayde, franklie acknowledgedd y^e^ charge of recusancie, but assuredd y^e^ councyll ryghte hartilie that hee dyd no wise absente hymselfe from y^e^ Protestante churche from evyll affectioun to y^e^ Queene's majestie or governemente, but solely from principle of conscience: and on y^e^ breaking up of y^e^ sittinge, Syr Frauncis Walsingham told hym, that forasmoche as further informacions were expectedd againste hym from y^e^ countrie, so sholde he not be dischargedd yet. Natheless he was usedd wyth civilitie, speciallie by y^e^ Erle of Essexe, who invytedd hym to dinnere, giving hym counselle, y^e^ whych he meante as friendlye and reasonable, albeit Maister Tregian cold no wayes followe it accordinge to hys conscience. My lorde of Essexe advysinge hym to appeare once at y^e^ Protestante servyce, assuringe hym

that thereupon all furthere prosecucion sholde stopp, and that Father Mayne sholde be releasedd. Syr Hubert resolveth to repaire to Launcestone, and if meanes cold be * * * that he myghte * * to y^e^ speech of Father Mayne * * colde aught be done to save hym * *

* * * *

Thys ii. daie of December.—Syr Hubert returneth disguysedd as a peasaunte, by whych he hadd * * * attende y^e^ tryall of Father Mayne, mixinge wyth y^e^ croude, and thus witnessedd also, alacke! y^e^ terminacion of hys lyffe in thys worlde, beinge y^e^ * * * lyffe eternalle and rewarde of hys laboures and sufferinges here belowe. The Erle of Bedforde was presaunt and dydd deale moste in y^e^ mattere. The Father was arraignedd chieflye for that a bulle from Rome was founde upon hym, absolving y^e^ Queene's subjectes from theyre allegiaunce. That hee hadd publishedd thys bulle and said masse at Goldene, y^e^ house of Maister Tregian, and deniedd y^e^ Queene's supremacie, maintaininge y^e^ userpedd powere of y^e^ Bishopp of Rome. But proofe lackedd thei of theese

heddes of ye indictmente. Ye papere alledgedd to be a bulle, on examinacion provedd to bee a graunte of ye jubilee of ye yere paste, ye whych Father M. hadd boughte at Douaye, from curiositie to see ye forme thereof. None colde prove thatt hee hadd assertedd ye Bishopp of Rome to possesse temporaille powere in Englaunde, but that he hadd averredd that hyr Majestie ye Queene hadd noe supremacie in matteres of religione, but hadd al supremacie in temporaille authoritie. In al thys ye wytnesses contradicte themselves and each othere, nathelesse is theyre evidaunce takenn; and ye judge, directinge the jurye to fynde ye prisonere guiltie, alledgedd "that where plain proofes were wantinge, stronge presumcions oughte to take place." He was a Popishe prieste, therefore an enemie to ye Queenes religione; and soe it followedd, by thys judge hys logicke, that hee must bee a traytore and a renouncere of ye Queene hyr temporaille supremacie, and of hys allegiaunce as hyr subjecte. When sentence of dethe was pronouncedd, as eftsoones yt was by thys moste unjust judge, in ye usuale forme in cases of hyghe treasonne, Father Mayne hearde yt wyth moche cheerfulnesse of countenaunce, lyftinge

hys haundes and eyes to heavenn, and sayinge, "Deo Gratias." Fyfteen daies after thys was the daie appoyntedd for executionn, inasmoche as Judge Jefferye disputedd ye proceedinges of hys colleagues, and wolde noe waies bee satisfyed with ye condemnacioun, manie otherse of ye oldere of ye judges were of Jefferye hys opinione; but yt beinge referredd to ye councile, it was decydedd that Father M. sholde bee executedd as a terrore to ye Papistes. On ye morninge of ye xxix. of Novembere, Syr Hubert, lurkinge rounde ye prisoune, from ye laccqueys he learnt that sondrie gentlemenn were aboute to visytte ye Popishe prieste, who was to die that daie. Keepinge thenn yn discourse wyth theese knaves, Syr Hubert efftlye contryves to slippe yn wyth them. At ye gate thei betake them to ye celle where was ye holie mann. There disturbynge hys laste houres of lyffe, they sett up a fierce disputacionn wyth hym on religiouse matteres; but he composeddlie, yett moste undauntedlie, confutedd themm onn al poynts, both from Scriptures and ye Fatheres, soe that thei hadd not one worde to replye, and after longe discoursinge, thei lefte hym in angere. Syr Hubert for one momente stoppinge behinde

to crave the Father's benisoun, tellynge hym, that grievouse as it was to see hym thus, yett was hys harte gladdenedd to heare hym soe utterlie confute y^e^ enemyes of our faithe. Father Mayne in a few wordes bidd hym bee of goode cheere, beare manfullie and patiauntlie y^e^ persecucions hee myghte also meete wyth, and addedd some kinde wordes for hys friendes, whom hee lefte. "Shortlie," saidd hee, "I truste to meete in heavenne." Nor dydd hee forgette mee, to whome hee ever has beene as a fathere, but wythe sweete wordes of counselle and consolacion hee sent to mee hys rosarie, reserving onlie hys breviarie; "For that," saidd hee, "I shall still have neede of." Wyth teares and lamentacions Syr Hubert hastenedd to rejoine y^e^ otheres, and presauntlie afterwardes minglinge wyth y^e^ crowde that now throngedd y^e^ streetes, he awaittedd to witnesse y^e^ end of thys bloudie tragedie; and evene whenne y^e^ holie Fathere appearedd at y^e^ prisoune doore, once more y^e^ ministeres and gentlemenn besette hym, for that thei wolde have hym renounce hys religione, promisinge hym lyffe and welthe, didde hee complie. Thys refusinge, thei presse hym earnestlie to declare that y^e^

Queene is supreme hedd of ye churche; thys as stoutlie hee denyes; wherefore thei laide hym on ye hurdle, to bee drawne to ye place of execucion; sondrie, wyth unparrelleldd crueltie, urgyng thatt hys hedde bee layde on ye grounde over ye carre, soe to bee dashedd agenste ye stones as thei wente alonge; but ye sheriffe hys deputie wolde no waies allowe thys. In ye markett-place was an hygh gybett; at ye foote thereof ye holie martyre kneeledd downe and prayedd a breefe space, then mountedd ye laddere, and, aftere ye rope was rounde hys necke, thei questionedd hym what hee knewe respectinge Maister Tregiaun and Syr Johnn Arundell, hoping to obtain mattere agenste themm; hee repliedd, firmlie and loudlie, that hee knewe naughte concerninge them; hee was then forbiddene to speake to ye people, and hee was turnedd off ye laddere ye whiles he saidd, "In manus tuas, Domine," &c. knockinge hys breste. Whyles hee yette livedd, thei cutte hym downe, but fallinge soche a heighte, he was but little sensible to ye butcherie that ensuedd. He was quarteredd, and ye quarters hung at Bodmyne, Tregneye, Barnestaple, and on ye castell at Launceston, * * *

* * as he is ye firste that has sufferedd dethe for our holie faithe, *
* * wille hee not bee ye laste
* * alacke! that our graciouse Queene sholde * * *
countenaunce persecucioune * *
* * * * *

[*Several sentences obliterated.*]

Januarie, thys ꝑbíí. A.D. m.ᵬ.lꝯꝑbíí.—Ladie Tracey is moche disquietted for that Mistresse Tregiaun sendeth to hyr to aske Syr Hubert his aide. The poore ladies troubles croude faste upon hyr. Maister Tregiaun is nowe in close confinement in ye Marshalsea prisonn, in London; diverse othere allegacions have beene broughte agenste hym, viz. that he had beene presente at masse, hadd receivedd Agnus Deis and a jubilee fromm ye Bishopp of Rome, and entertaynedd those that assertedd ye Pope hys supremacie—he was noe waies permitted to hold anie communicacion wyth hys familie, wherebye hys affayres sufferedd moch detrimente, as in ye presente case. Hee had dealte wyth one Brandore, a goldsmith in London, to whome hee owedd certayne moneys; therefore ye artisann,

hearinge thatt Maister Tregiaun laye under moche peryll by reasonn of thys prosecucion, and fearinge to lose that whyche was owinge to hym, repayredd forthwythe to Goldene, and seisedd goodes valuedd at fyve hundrede poundes. I was forthewythe dispatched by Syr Hubert, wyth monies to meete thys soe harde a demande. I founde Mistresse Tregiaun sorelie perplexedd; but whenn ye knavish goulde-smythe saw thatt friendes were at hande, and that I menacedd hym wyth ye arryvalle of Syr Hubert, hee was contente to take two hondred poundes, whereas Maister Tregian onlie owedd hym seventie, and soe departedd. I sojourned some days, ye whiles ye poore ladies spyrittes recoveredd thys panike. Meanwhile there arryvedd a messenger from Launcestone, to appryse hyr that Maister Tregian had beene removedd thithere, hys enemies havying fearedd thatt whereas hee hadde sondrie friendes in Londone, whereof were manie menn in powere, ye whych myghte frustrate theyre designes, thei noe waies doubtinge thaie sholde carrye theyre pointe when hee was in Cornewayle. One Walkere, knowne to beare hym moche ill wille, was chosen to conducte hym on hys journeye; and beinge a mann devoyde both

of humanitie and of courteouse demeanoure, Maistere Tregian hadd sufferedd moche hardeshippe and contumelie from hym. Theese tydinges, though no wais satisfactorie, gladdenedd ye poore ladie, by reasonne thatt shee hopedd nowe to obtaine a meetinge wyth hyr husbande, from whome she has so longe beene partedd, and in thys expectacioun shee repayred forthwythe to Launcestone. I journeyedd wyth hyr thythere, and having made myselfe a fruitlesse endeavor to gain admittance to Maister Tregian, although thei dyd not denye ye possibilitye thatt hys ladie myghte bee allowedd to share hys prisonne, I returnedd to Trewardrethe.

Thys xxv. daie.—I was moche rejoicedd to receive a lettere from my soe moche valued friende Dr. Alleyne, at Rhemes, where ye universitie, ye more to testifie their satisfaction at ye arryvall of so learnedd a bodie of menn in thatt towne, and to rewarde hys merittes, have appoynted hym a canon of the cathedrale. The Englishe college, blessedd be Godde! prosperes welle, and promyses to thryve in its newe abode. Nathelesse Dr. Alleyne has, hee telles mee, been affryghtedd by an attempte from Englande.

Hyr Majestie ye Queene, imagininge that ye Englishe exiles and seminarie receivedd soe kinde a welcomm in Rhemes, by reasonne of interestte made in therye favor wyth ye familye of Guise, by ye unhappye Queene of Scottes, fromm hyr durance at Sheffielde castell, harshlie and wyth severitie causedd hyr to be questionedd. Noe proofe colde be obtainedd thatte ye poore princesse had anie dealinge in ye mattere; nathelesse hyr highnesse ye Queene used meanes, by hyr embassador at Paris, altogether to put a stop to ye establishmente at Rhemes. Providence watchedd over it, and ye Queenes designes provedd fruitlesse: nay, it prosperes moche alreadie, and two hondrede personnes are now dwellinge in it, or dependinge uponne it. Another college is also aboute to bee establishedd at Rome, whych wyll moche aide that at Rhemes, and tende marvellouslie to furthere ye cause of our holie faithe, by bringing up so manie labourers for ye vineyarde of our Lorde. Manye Englishe, who, on account of persecucioun for theyre faithe, had fled beyonde seas, have gone also to sojourne at Rhemes, havinge (as some saie, at ye sute of Wylsonne, ye Englishe embassador) beene moved oute of ye Spa-

nishe Netherlandes, on ye false accusacionn of holdinge correspondence wyth Spaine; but it is more generallie thoughte to be ye work of ye Frenche Hugonotts, who instilledd into ye natyves of Lovaine ye thoughte thatt ye Englishe were in ye Frenche intereste, and wolde deliver up ye towne to Fraunce. Alacke for ye poore Englishe Catholickes in banyshmente! either calledd traytoures devysinge plottes wyth Spaine, or saidd to be forminge plannes wyth Fraunce. Amongste sondrie otheres, Doctoure Alleyne saies theyre bee ye Lorde Morleye, ye Erle of Westmorelaunde and hys countesse, ye Lorde Dacre, and hys brothere Edwarde, wyth manie of ye gentrie. Pittie it is thatt * *

* * and evill councills sholde

* * * * thus

is Englande deprivedd of ye flowere of hyr nobilitie, selfe-bannishedd from theyre natyve lande.

Thys ii. daie of Aprille.—Syr Hubert returnedd yester even from Launcestone; havinge sojournedd there mean whiles hys friende Maister Tregiaun was on hys tryall, endeavouringe, but vaynlie, to assiste hym in these hys so perylouse ıtrates; but none of Maister Tregiaunes friendes

myghte come neere hym. The Queene's councille dyd procure to charge hym with ye severall inditementes wherebye Father Mayne had beene condemnedd and executedd; and, lackinge witnesses of respectabilitie, thaie scrupled not to give credence to ye nowaies probable tale of a strollinge fiddlere, who had beene admitted to play at Goldene for the Xmasse diversione of ye householde. Maister Tregiaun beinge allowedd to make hys exceptiounes, saidde thatt whereas thys musiciaune dyd affirm thatt hee hadde occupied ye same chambere wyth Father Mayne, who owned to hym thatt hee was a prieste, and was come frome Rome; hee made it clearlie to appeare, frome questiounes that hee putte to ye false knave, thatt hee was nowaies acquainted wyth anie chambere in ye mansionn of Goldene. Maister T. also proposedd, was it likelie thatt Father Mayne, knowne for a cautiouse man, colde wyth suche lacke of ordinarie prudence avowe hymselfe to be a prieste to thys low vagabonde, or allowe hym to abyde in ye same chambere wyth hymselfe. Moreover it was plainlie shewne thatt ye musiciaune was forsworne, as hee had declared uponne hys othe, thatt thys was at Xmasse m.d.lxxv.,

when it hadde beene provedd that Father Mayne came not into Englande till y^e^ Eastere followinge, and never had beene in Rome in hys lyffe; and fortye witnesses had hee to prove thys; thei were not nathelesse in courte readye to come forthe, therefore y^e^ judges saidd, it was frivolouse to mentionn themm, and thatt y^e^ tryall colde not be put off; thus y^e^ case was deliveredd over to the jurye. Mean whiles paynes were taken to persuade Maister Tregiaun to be presaunte once at churche, wythe hartie promises thatt there uponn y^e^ prosecucion sholde droppe; but refusynge wyth indignacionn, he was founde guiltie of all y^e^ severall articles in y^e^ indictementes; judgmente nathelesse is not yet given, and Maister Tregiaun has dispatchedd a servaunte to Londone wythe letteres to sondrie hys friendes, apprysinge them of hys tryall, and solicitynge theire intereste towardes y^e^ mitigatioun of hys sentence, which wyll doubtlesse bee passedd at y^e^ nexte assyzes.

Thys v. daie of Maye.—Mistress Tregiaun wryteth, sayinge, thatt havinge longe moche marvayled to get no acknowledgemente from anie theire friendes thatt theire letteres hadd

beene receyvedd, thaie have now to their discomforte founde, thatt theire servaunte hadd beene stoppedd at Honitone, ye letteres taken from hym, togethere with monies hee was conveyinge to Londone, to paye to sondrie creditores of Maister Tregiaunes, and ye poore knave himselfe caste into prisonn; all hope is thenn at an ende that anie theire friendes can do aughte for thys soe moche misusedd gentelmann.

Septembere ye tenthe daie.—I have journeyedd to Launcestone wyth Syr Hubert, ye assyzes beinge commencedd, when sentence wyll be pronouncedd uponn Maister Tregiaun * * * * thatt we myghte be at hande colde aughte be done * * * * hys behalfe. Judge Manwoode, a violente and personall enemye to hym beinge on ye circuitt, and * * * and havinge receivedd instructiounes for ye sentence * * * * Syr Hubert hath seen * * * who telles hym thatt a premunire hadd been incurred, forfeyture of gooddes, wyth imprisonmente

for lyffe, or duringe y^e^ pleasure of hyr highnesse y^e^ Queene, (Godde forfende thatt mye libertie sholde depende on y^e^ pleasure of hyr moste graciouse majestie!)

Thys xiii. daie.—We have passedd manie houres lystinge to y^e^ allegacionnes of Maister Tregiaun hys counselle, whie judgemente sholde not passe; thei stronglye insisted thatt no facte had beene provedd againste hym, save recusancie, whych he confessed, and submittedd to y^e^ penaltye thereof. Thatt it colde nowaies appear thatt hee was privie to aughte whereof Fr. Mayne was accusedd, of bringinge y^e^ Pope hys jubilee fromm Rome, and other acts. Far more impossible was it to prove hee hadd abettedd or countenancedd y^e^ denyall of y^e^ Queenes supremacie. But all their pleadings, al argumentacions, were vaine. Syr Hubert hadd endeavoredd, but wythout successe, to dissuade Mistress Tregiaun from attendinge in y^e^ courte, and nowe when sentence was passedd, thys poore ladie colde no wayes restraine hyr griefe, but broke into passionate lamentacione moste piteouse to heare, forcinge, as it were, teares to flowe frome y^e^ eies of manie, save hym whose

obduracie was ye cheefe cause of all, who, in ye tribulacionn and ruinn of ye mann hee hatedd, founde sweet solace for hys malice and his vengeaunce; and Judge Manwoode smyledd in deadlie malace, to heare ye doleful playnte thatt meltedd everie harte but hys. Exclayminge agenste ye mockerie of justice wherebie hyr husbande was condemnedd wythoute proofe, and callinge on Heavenne to protecte ye innocente who hadde noe friende on earthe, ye unhappye ladie swoonedd, and was carriedd to hyr lodginge. Despite of ye expostulacionnes of Syr Hubert, and of manie gentlemenn who, albeite stronge enemyes to Catholickes, stille wolde not see one of their owne degree treatedd lyke a common felonne, Maister Tregiaun was draggedd to a loathsome prisonne depryvedd of ye lyghte of daie, no bedde, nor soe moche as a stoole where onn to sitte.

Thys xiv. daie.—Syr Hubert, after moche endeavore founde hys poore friende aboute to be removedd into ye castell, where, tho' ye prisonne be poorlie furnishedd, it is a palaysse to ye dungeone where hee passedd ye nyghte; and as hee was nowe to sojourne there, I prevailedd

wyth hys ladye to returne to Goldene, wither I journyedd wyth hyr.

Thys xv. daie.—Sorelie is ye fortitude and patiaunce of Mistress Tregiaun ordeynedd to be tryedd. At midde nyghte was ye house besette, ye unhappye ladye rousedd out of ye unquiett sleepe into wyche exhaustedd nature hadd fallen, and in a deadlie panike shee wente forthe to meete those who soe rudelie demaunded admittaunce. Nor was hyr soe cruelle feares diminishedd when shee founde certeyne officeres arrivedd fromme Londone, commissionedd to breake opene ye doores sholde thei finde resistaunce, and to seise on al ye goodes and possessiones of thys afflyctedd familye, orderinge at ye same tyme, wyth moche opprobriouse speeche, thatt ye ladie sholde forth wythe quitte ye house wyth hyr three chyldrene, regardlesse of hyr condicionn, beinge verie bigge wyth chylde. Callinge myselfe Syr Hubert hys stewarde, I offeredd on hys partte monies to anie reasonable amounte that wolde satisfye themm; I then menacedd, but al in vayne: thei hadde authoritie for al thei dydde, and were not to bee put off; and nowe appearedd ye soe admyrable spy-

ritte of thys vertuose ladye. Castinge on theese cruelle menne a glaunce of meeke rebuke, "Worthie ministeres ye bee," quothe she, "to execute a business soche as thys; I wolde not bee beholdene to ye for an houres sheltere even in ye house that is mine owne; t'were pittye to defraude ye of ye satisfactionne ye soe earnestlie desyre. Ye syghte of a womann and three helplesse infants at midde-nyghte, driven forthe into ye fieldes, must needes brynge solace to your hartes; I wyll not therefore take ye tyme I myghte, to see to ye conveyaunce of necessaryes for myselfe and my poore babes, whereof mayhappe ye were not chargedd to depryve mee, but scorninge to take ye smalleste favore at your handes, I instantlye shall leave ye house, in no wyse doubtinge that ye Godde who is a fathere to ye fatherlesse wyll guard my chyldrene wyth hys care as wyth a shielde, and supporte theire welle nighe brokene heartedd mothere." I folfowedd hyr to beseeche thatt shee wolde tarrye at ye leaste tyll ye morninge, but shee colde no waies endure to sojourne in ye house wyth those who colde soe opprobriouslye insulte hyr: hastilie then collectinge some wearyinge apparelle, she carefullye wrapped her infantes, and placed

themm wythe ye gooddes in pannieres on a trusty mule, and mountynge another hyrselfe, attended onlie by one faithefulle maiden, and a servynge mann, she set forthe, intendinge to staye at Trewardrethe tyll shee colde devyse what furthere planne to acte upon. A stormie blaste blewe ye clowdes athwarthe ye moone, and betymes left al in uttere darkenesse, whiles ye raine driftedd stronge as ye desolate familie turned to leave, mayhappe for aye, ye seate of theire race. Ye poore ladye upp turned hyr eies to heavene, and for a breefe space seemed to aske protectionne fromm Godde, and to resygne al to ye divyne wyll; instantlie hyr aspecte became calme and cheerefulle, and durynge ye longe and wearisome roade, shee discowrsed on wyse and pithie matteres as tho' no evill hadd befallene her; save when ever and anone, ye colde and wette called forthe pittyfulle cries fromm ye poore babes, a pang then seemedd to shoote across ye mothere's harte. Soon after daie dawnedd I was gladdenedd to enter betweene ye statlie rowes of oakes in Trewardrethe parke, and to conducte my soe helplesse charge wythin ye portalle of ye mansionn, and ye ryghte welcome care and tendernesse of Ladie Tracie

lefte no arte untryedd to restore y^e^ strengthe, and solace y^e^ woes and toyles of hyr soe sufferinge friende.

Thys xx. daie.—Syr Hubert repayredd to Goldene, where hee founde y^e^ house ransackedd, y^e^ costlie hanginges and furnyshynges of y^e^ chamberes taken awaye, or spoyledd, and lyinge broken yn heapes wythout y^e^ house, and y^e^ goodlie portrayture of hys friende and Mistresse Tregiaun, payntedd by y^e^ ryghte skilfulle lymnere fro' Italye, Maister Zucchero, torne fro' y^e^ pannellynge, and throwne, as yn despyghte, on y^e^ pavynge of y^e^ courte. Noe wais chusynge to leave even y^e^ semblaunce of hys so worthye kinnesmann to bee y^e^ sporte of knavishe ribaldrye, and for y^e^ preservacionn of soe noble a worke of y^e^ limnere hys arte, Syr Hubert causedd sondrye of y^e^ peasauntes who were gazynge aboute, to conveie y^e^ portrayture hythere, and yt is nowe hunge on y^e^ walle of y^e^ long gallerye, where yt proves nearlye yn syze as yn y^e^ desygne, a matche for thatt done of Syr Hubert, my ladye, and theyre chylderne, by the same haunde.—Syr Hubert is advysedd by one skilledd in y^e^ lawe, thatt noughte remaynes for

hys kinsmann in Launcestone castell, soe to bee an eie witnesse of y^e^ state of hys prisonn, that, returninge to Londone, he myghte then testifie to y^e^ memoriale thatt Mistresse Tregiaun was causinge to be drawne up to offere to hyr Highnesse y^e^ Queene. Y^e^ Ladie Hunsdone, whose husbande, hyghe in favore, has latelie beene appoyntedd Governore of Barwike, has kindlie promisedd to presente Mistresse Tregiaun to hyr Majestie. Y^e^ poore ladie, therfore, wryteth in some hope of successe. But greate were hyr sufferynges on hyr soe wearisome journeye: fallinge in travayle as shee crossedd y^e^ wilde countrie thatt spreddes farre acrosse Wilteshere, shee was faine to ryde manie myles in moche paine, tyll shee arryved at Salisburie, and had scarcelie reachedd y^e^ Hostelrie when shee was deliveredd of a femayle chylde; shee tarryed natheless not manie daies ere shee againe proceededd, and pleasauntlie remarkedd, thatt by y^e^ birthe of thys fourthe chylde y^e^ ladynge of hyr mule was orderedd aftere a more seemlie fashionne, for that y^e^ pannieres were now more evenlie balancedd.

Thys iv. daie of Novembere.—Sadde newes

arryve from Launcestone: despyghte of al effortes to y^e^ contrarye made by Syr Hubert and otheres, Maister Tregiaun's goodes, and part of his launded estates, are sellinge by y^e^ Queenes authoritie, and y^e^ monies disposed accordinge to hyr Majesties pleasure. Sholde thys continue, soone wyll thys moste ill fatedd gentlemann be reducedd to beggarie. *

* * * * *

[*Here several pages were too much defaced to be legible.*]

Thys xxx. daie of Maie.—My valuedd friende Doctore Mauryce Clenocke wryteth to mee fromm Rome, where hee has beene namedd presidente of y^e^ Englishe Colledge soe latelie happilie establishedd there, his holiness Gregorie ꝑiii. havynge addedd plentifullie to y^e^ rentes of y^e^ aunciente Spittalle, formerlie endowedd for pilgrimmes, and whych has been graunted by hym as a colledge. Doctore Owenn also procuringe sondrie benefactionnes, whereby y^e^ house was furnishedd wyth bookes and goodes, and liberallye spendynge hys owne substance in ayde of y^e^ endowemente, y^e^ revenue nowe amountes to 1,500 poundes sterlinge, beinge

sufficiente, as it is supposedd, to maintaine neere sixtie personnes; wee have thearefore hopes, blessedd bee Godde, to have in thys establyshemente manie more subjectes brynginge up for Preestes, in after tyme to ayde y^e^ goode cause in thys soe unhappie countrye.

Thys xx. daie of June.—Syr Hubert hearinge that by reason of furthere sales of Maister Tregiaun hys estates by order of y^e^ Queenes councyll, Mistresse Katharine Tregiaun, hys mothere, is most unjustlie depryvedd of hyr joynture, and of al meanes of subsistence, indytes a message to hyr, willing hyr to take up hyr abode in hys house, and shee most gratefullye acceptes the offere.

Thys xxv. daie.—Y^e^ agedd ladie arryves at Trewardreth, moche worne by greefe and anxietie for hyr soe moche sufferyng sonne, whoe is, shee saies, well nyghe starvedde to dethe in prisonn,—y^e^ small meanes hee hadd, passynge thro' y^e^ handes of manie mostlie ill affected towardes hym. I am full fayne to see and speake wyth hym, and resolve to devyse how to accomplish it

Thys i. daie of Julye.—After some thoughte, I determinedd to goe boldlye to Launcestone, and, as Syr Hubert hys stewarde, demaund admittaunce to Maister Tregian, sayinge that hys mothere and kinsfolke desyredd to heare of hys helthe, and hadd sente mee to see hym. Moche difficultye I mett wyth, ye governor firstlie refusynge, but I was resolute; soe, after compellynge mee to bee narrowlie searchedd, soe that it myghte bee seene that I was ye bearer of noe lettere, or instromente wherebie hee myghte effecte hys escape, I was admittedd; and sorelie was I grievedd to finde ye unhappie gentlemann in a loathesome dungeone, loadedd wyth ironns thirtie poundes weighte, and wyth twentie common malefactores in ye same roome, wych, havinge beene cleansedd but once durynge a monthe he had passedd there, the floore was coveredd wyth filthe, and the stenche no waies to bee enduredd. What was even less easie for hym to beare, was ye treatmente wych hee met wyth from sondrie of ye malefactores, who in moste opprobriouse speeche reviledd hym for hys pretendedd disloyaltie agenste ye Queene and Governemente, but mostlie for hys prayinge and religiouse discourse; revilinges meete for soche

villeynes; the jailere noe waies offeringe to restraine themm. Angrilie askynge wherefore a mann of gentle byrthe sholde be stowedd wyth y^e^ loweste felonnes, y^e^ jailere saidd it was to prevente hys escape, whych it seemes hee had endeavouredd to effect. Mellancoly, in goode truthe, was the storie wych thys so moche enduryng gentlemann unfoldedd to mee. Hee hadd, hee saidd, entirelye resynedd al hopes of freedome, and therefore, in a true Xtianne spyritt, resolvedd to spende hys tyme in religiouse meditacion and prayere, directinge hys thoughtes to y^e^ blessinges attendinge on those whoe carrye y^e^ crosse, followynge y^e^ stepps of oure blessedd Savioure. Divyding hys tyme in regular exercyses, and occasionallie recreatynge hys mynde wyth indytinge poesye, hee thus founde hymselfe resygnedd to y^e^ holie wyll of Godde; and beinge comfortedd by thynkinge thatt what hee enduredd was put on hym for professynge our holie faithe, hys minde was in a state of calme contente. Havynge at y^e^ firste y^e^ roomes in y^e^ towere, hee colde addicte hymselfe to hys pursuites, albeit hee was ill suppliedd wyth materiales for wrytinge, oftentimes being constrayned to use a pin wyth y^e^ snuffe of a candel mixed in watere, in lieu of penn

and inke. Thys tranquillitie, however, hee was not longe permittedd to enjoye. On a certaine mornynge one enteredd hys roome, as tho' to brynge hys dinnere, when, on some pretexte comynge neere hym, the villeyne rushed on hym, stryvinge to stabbe hym with a huge knife. Beinge vigorouse of bodie, Maister Tregiaun wrestledd wyth hys foe, till ye jailere hearinge a noyse, enteredd ye chaumbere; and for verie shame, noe waies chusinge to appeare to have a part in soe foulle an attempte, lente hys aidde to disarme hym whoe wolde faine have beene a murtherer, and straitewaies callinge otheres to helpe, hadd hym thruste downe into a secure celle tyll hee colde make ye case knowne to ye sheriffe. Frome somm circomstances, Maister T. thoughte thatt thys attempte on hys lyffe was made by those who hadd enrichedd themselves wyth partte of hys substance, and who fearedd lest, by ye zeale of sondrie hys friendes, thatt hee sholde regaine hys libertie, and then commence proceedinges to regaine also hys propertie, and thei hadd therefore gotten thys hirelinge knave to murthere hym. Nathelesse ye jailere colde no waies answere wherefore hee allowedd ye mann to

enter Maister Tregiaun hys prisonne; it seemedd, consequentlie, that hee was not altogethere unfriendlye to ye attempte; Maister T. therefore thoughte thatt nowe hys lyffe was noe waies in safetie, and thatt sholde he bee murtheredd in prisonne, it wolde bee saidd thatt he dyedd of sicknesse, or hadd causedd hys own dethe, ye wych suggestionn troubledd hym more than al: he then set aboute devysinge meanes of escape, ye wych beinge discoveredd, ye jailer caste hym into thys dreadfulle place, where hee founde himselfe in moche a worse plyghte than before, and wyth hee knewe not what hopes of release. On hearinge thys soe sadde complaynte, and knowinge ye sheriffe to bee then in ye towne, I wente to hym, and partlie wyth representinge to hym howe evill an appearance soche unseemlie treatmente of a gentlemann wolde have in ye eies of al (and I hartilie assuredd hym that al Maister Tregiaun hys friendes wolde loudlie blazone it forthe), and partlie remindinge hym of obligationes hee owedd thys unhappie gentlemann, I obtained fromm hym an order for Maister T. to bee againe removedd to ye towere chambere hee hadd occupied before; and ere I left Launcestone I was comfortedd to

see hym, in what, after y^e^ loathesome dungeone, was in hys minde a palace.

* * * *

* * * *

Octobere thys seventhe daie.—Syr Hubert, goinge on businesse to Launcestone yesternoone, was ryghte gladde to finde that Maister Tregian hopedd soone to bee removedd to Londone, and wyth some persuasion y^e^ jailer consentedd to permitte Syr H. to speake wyth hys friende. Maister T. shewedd hym a lettere from hys excellente ladie, who wyth admyrable courage and spyritt hadd toyledd even agenste hope, to serve hyr soe moche injuredd husbande; followinge y^e^ courte, and makinge ofte tymes personall applicacion to hyr Majestie, as well as by usinge also y^e^ intereste of hyr friendes, to endeavour to abtaine redresse, or hys removall to a lesse straitenedd prisonn than Launcestone. Mistress T. has nowe preparedd a memorialle sygnedd in behalfe of Maister T. by my lorde of Essexe, who has never ceasedd to shewe interest in hys concernes, and earnestlie cravynge as a boone thatt Maister T. sholde bee confynedd at y^e^ leaste more suitably to hys condicionne, and better provydedd wyth y^e^ necessaryes of lyffe.

Thys ye Erle promisses to presente hymselfe to hyr highnesse ye Quene, who in ye ensuinge moneth wyll holde hyr courte in moche state at hyr palayce of Westmenstere. Ye Frenche Dewke, Monsr Frauncis of Anjoue, beinge then lookedd for; and for-as-moche reporte saithe thatt hyr highnesse is in moste complacente moode wyth expectacione of receavyng thys royale suter, soe wyll ye tyme bee meete for preferringe anothere sute, albeit it bee of a far diverse bearinge fromm thatt of Monsieure Anjoue.

[*Here the MS. had been much spoiled from damp, only detached words were legible.*]

* daie * * greate
contentemente * * *
a lettere from my worthie friende Edmonde Campion, who wyth Fathere Parsons arryved
* * in London * *
from Rhemes, thei journeyedd togethere *
* beinge as it were ye firste fruites of ye colledge there, and of ye Societye of Jesu, for ye spirytualle * *
in Englaunde * * *

difficoltye landinge at Dovere, detainedd by searchers on y^e^ watche, but Godde ordeynedd thatt thei sholde * * *
and on Seynt Peter and Powles daie hee preachedd for y^e^ firste tyme to a large assemblie, wherein were sondrie of highe condicion. Hee has synce made proffer to holde disputacion wyth anie of y^e^ newe faithe who wolde engage to meete hym, but none yet have judgedd yt propere to accepte y^e^ challenge * * *
hys rare talentes in preachinge, and mervailouse giftes of speeche, wyll make hym a potente auxiliarie in y^e^ cause of religionn, as also an adversarie harde to encounter.

Thys seconde daie of Auguste.—A trustie servaunte dispatchedd on affayres into Cornewayle by Mistresse Tregiaun, has broughte a lettere from hyr, conteyninge y^e^ goode newes of Maister T. hys safe arryval in Londone, havinge at y^e^ laste beene removedd to y^e^ Kinges Benche prisonn, whithere hys ladie was permittedd to followe hym; and by y^e^ joye that seemes to gladdene theyre hartes at thys meetynge, it sholde seeme that thei forgette that hee is in prisonn, and wyth but smal hopes of leavinge it;

and even thys raye of comfortt thatt shynes on themm as yt were, after so manie moneths of darke tribulacion, thei are noe waies permittedd to enjoye without moche disquiett and losse. Y^e officere who was chargedd to conveye Maister T. to Londone had demaundedd of hym y^e egregiouse paymente of fiftie poundes for charges on y^e roade, and when hee demurredd concerninge it, y^e knavishe officere threatenedd to take hym backe to Cornewayle. Vainlie dyd Maistere T. peticion against thys soe unjuste a demaunde. Hee causedd hys case to be layedd before y^e councll, naye, y^e Erle of Essex venturedd soe farre as to hazarde a worde on y^e mattere before hyr Majestie; but hee hadd ill chosen hys tyme. Hyr highnesse choler hadd been raysed on othere matteres, or thys affayre was mainlie displeasinge to hyr, for shee chaffedd moche at y^e Erle, scruplinge not to use manie harshe wordes, and, wyth a ryghte hartie othe, averringe thatt y^e verie name of Tregiaun causedd hyr to bee sicke, for that naughte else hadd beene in hyr eares durynge y^e paste twelve moneths but y^e concernes of thys moste contumaciouse recusante; and she desyredd that hys name myghte never more be saidde before hyr,

or hee who saidde it sholde repente it. Nor dyd th' Erle for manie daies dare to presente hymselfe agenn before hyr hyghnesse. Naughte then remainedd but for Mistress Tregiaun to raise ye moneis as shee colde. Shee solde hyr best apparelle, sondrie conninglie broideredd kirtles, and ye jeweles thatt styl remayned to hyr; but theese fallynge shorte of ye summe, she sent to see colde aughte be raisedd fromm ye wrecke at Goldene. Syr Hubert thereupon sente ye moneis hymselfe by ye trustie messengere, who was on hys returne to repayre to ye Flete prisoun, whither hys maister was about to bee removedd, and where hys soe excellaunte ladye wyth her chylderne hadd obtainedd leave also to resyde. Hyr highnesses greate severitie in thys mattere causes, it seemes, moche talke at ye courte; where ye gallante bearinge of Maister Tregiaun, and ye spyritt and patiaunte endeavores of hys ladie, have causedd generall admiracion. Maister T. havinge beene alsoe once in soche speciall favore with hyr highnesse, whoe sodainelie, and wythout anie manifeste cause, usedd bittere revilinges agenste hym, and alsoe hys beinge as it were in some sorte kinsmann to hyr Majestie, hys grete grandame be-

inge daughtere to Thomas Graye, Marquisse of Dorsett, and neece to y^e^ ladie Elisabethe, wife to hys graciouse majestie Henrie VII, y^e^ mervayle is increasedd at y^e^ hatredd in whych hyr highnesse nowe holdes hym and hys vertuouse ladie, on whome she has oftentymes bestowedd wordes of moche contumelie. Naie there bee, as Syr Hubert has hearde, those whome y^e^ queenes lacke of favore has causedd to entertaine ranklinges and harte burninges agenste hyr royalle personne, and who scruple not to affyrme thatt of a certaintie hyr highnesse dyd moche delyghte in y^e^ syghte of thys welle favouredd gentlemann; tyll hyr hartes favor expreste towardes hym wythout disguisinge, calledd forthe from hym respectfulle yet firme denialle of hyr love, wyth manie sinceare protestacions of constancie and affectionn towardes hys wyffe; hyr highnesse, accustomed to see in those aboute hyr excesse of joye at y^e^ smalleste marke of hyr approvall, was stunge wyth y^e^ noe waies courtlie demeanore of Maister Tregiaun; love rejectedd added fuelle to thys flame, and wyth impetuouse wrathe y^e^ queene was seene to dryve hym forthe from hyr chambere. Thus doe evill passionnes uncontrolledd, in y^e^ ende obtaine

a soverayntie evene in hartes and myndes of nobleste fashionn.

Thys xvii. daie.—Father Campion has sente mee a booke hee has latelie endyted, addressedd to bothe ye universities, contayinge soche pithie desputacion respectynge ye truthes of our holie faithe, and ye lacke of proofe thatt these newe doctrines are those taughte by ye apostells, but that thei rathere contradicte ye principall pointes of faithe laide downe by Christe hymselfe, so thatt ye preacheres and ministeres finde themselves therebie (hee telles mee) deeplye woundedd in theyre doctryne and creditt, and thatt, after a fewe vayne attemptes to replye in treatyses wych noe waies answeredd ye objectionnes in hys booke, thei have nowe solicitedd hyr majesties councill to put accusacionnes in matteres of state, and ye cause of ye Queene, ye rathere than on controversie in matteres of religionn, thatt therebie myghte bee maintainedd by force and authorytie, what thei colde noe wayes do by theyre learnynge and divinitye; whereuponn it is nowe given oute by sondrie and proclamacions, thatt greate consultacions are makinge by ye Pope and forayne

princes to invade y^e^ kingdome, and thatt y^e^ Jesuittes and othere priestes are sente forsoothe to prepare y^e^ waies for them. Wyth soche like trumperie do thei beguyle and incense y^e^ simple; extream diligence is therefore now usinge for farthere apprehensyonns, and specially of Fathere Campion himselfe, who saies hee feeles moche honouredd in beinge called by them y^e^ Pope hys championn.—Thys, tho' it serves to shewe y^e^ constancie of those who professe our holie faithe, nathelesse will, I feare, depryve ere longe y^e^ churche on erthe of thys soe worthie and useful a membere. * * *

(Here a blank occurs in the MS.)

Thys thirtiethe daie of Julye.—I yesternighte received a lettere from Londone, where matters daylie get worse, y^e^ tow're and prisonnes are crowdedd wyth Catholicke clergye and lay personnes. Mye schoole companion, Lewis Hance (fromerlye y^e^ noted preacher of y^e^ newe fangled doctrynes in y^e^ Queenes chapell, and who was converted to y^e^ Catholicke faythe at y^e^ same tyme wyth my selfe), coming from Rhemes to Londone, betakes hym to y^e^ Marshalsea, there

to visytt sondrie priestes in prisonn, and to learn from themm wherein he colde ye beste labour in ye harvest of our Lorde. Hee was moche markedd of one of ye under keepers, who noticedd that hys shoes were made in France, whereuponn hee cryes out, a traytoure. On thys exclamacion, Hance is apprehended, caste into prisonn, and shortlie after, tho' no proofe of treasonn can thei find agenst hym, hee is put to dethe moste cruellye, and quarteredd ye whiles he was yet alyve, beinge hearde to saie ye wordes, "O Diem felicem," ye whiles ye executionere was tearynge forthe hys harte. In ye streetes, poursuivantes perpetuallie are on ye watche whome thei sholde entrappe. My friende Maister Haydocke, in February laste, was takenn in a shoppe in St. Powle's yarde, onlie on suspicionn; but that is sofficiente to take hym to prisonn, and once founde to bee a Catholicke, there is no hope for hym.

Maister Johnsone, cominge on horsebacke from ye countrye, is taken in Holborne, for thatt ye poursuivante suspectedd hym. Hys horse and money are taken from hym—thenn is hee taken before Walsinghame, and for thatt hee confessedd nothing, hee is sondrie tymes

severely rackedd, and kepte meanwhiles in a close dungeone; at lengthe put to dethe, beinge quarteredd alyve. As alsoe Friar Hemesforde, apprehendedd in Winchestere, for thatt hee stopedd y^e^ whiles a smythe shoedd hys horse, and one passinge by, cryed out a Popish prieste. Hee is sente wyth Friar Adams, Owen and Stransham, y^e^ lattere taken at y^e^ altar y^e^ whiles hee was celebratinge Masse, y^e^ otheres meerlie for thatt thei were saidde to bee priestes, and all are martyredd in y^e^ Tow're.

At Durham alsoe is persecucionn cruellie active: Fathere Boast, Hill, Hogge, Holidaye and Dake, have beene martyredd there latelie, and y^e^ prisonnes are fulle to overflowinge. From Yorke to Lincolne, Carlisle and Newcastle, I dailye heare alsoe y^e^ same tydinges as in Kente and y^e^ counties neere to Londone; yett no waies are y^e^ missionaries dauntedd, nor does y^e^ harvestte lacke a fresh supplye of labourers, thatt y^e^ places of those thatt dye in y^e^ cause may bee forthwythe supplyedd. By everie occasionn does our college at Rhemes, as well as that of Rome, send over pastors to ministere to thys soe moche afflyctedd people; theie come preparedd to suffere everie privatioun, persecucionn

and dethe itselfe; thus provinge themselves true shepherdes, layinge downe theyre lyves for theyre flockes.

Thys v. daie of Auguste.—Sadde newes have reached mee; mye moche esteemedd friende Fathere Campion has beene betrayedd into y^e^ handes of hys deadlye enemies, and taken after a long searche at Lyforde, y^e^ house of y^e^ piouse Maister Yates, wyth two othere priestes, Ford and Collingtone; thei were firste taken to Abingdone, where thei sojournedd two daies in y^e^ sheriffe of Berkeshire hys custodye; durynge wyche tyme sondrie scholares from Oxforde came to see thys soe famous Campione, whose wrytinges hadd wroughte soe moche mervayle and disputacionn; thence to Londone, where, as thoughe thei wolde lessene y^e^ distinctionn wyth wych Fathere Campione hadd beene regardedd, they heapedd contumelie upon hym and hys companionnes; tyinge theyre legges under y^e^ horsses whereon thei rode, and theyre armes behinde theyre backes; and upon my friendes hat was set a paper inscribed—"*Thys is Campione y^e^ Seditiouse Jesuitt.*" Orders were givenn to staie on y^e^ roade Fridaye, thatt

so arryvinge in Londone y^e^ next daie, thei sholde passe thro' y^e^ markettes, wych on Saturdaies are throngedd; and y^e^ croude was incytedd to use opprobriouse speeche, and make moche noyse as y^e^ holie menn passedd on to y^e^ Towere, where thei are nowe confynedd.

Thys xvii. daie of Septembere.—Maistere Trevyllian arryvedd from Londone, whence hee bringes doleful tydinges of y^e^ Catholickes in diverse prisonnes, and chieflie of those in y^e^ Towere, where hee hadd ofte tymes got to y^e^ speeche of sondrie of them—y^e^ jailers hopynge therebie to discover mattere for accusacionn, by allowinge theyre friendes to speake wyth them thro' a gratedd casemente. Fathere Campione, hee telles mee, is moche visittedd by Syr Walter Raleigh, who formerlie knewe hym at Oxforde, as deacon of thys newe faythe in y^e^ Sente Johnnes colledge; Syr W. ofte tymes enteringe into disputacion wyth hym, seemeth moche to marvaile at hys pythie reasoninge, and makes sondrie and ofte repeatedd endeavoures to save hym, by supplicacionnes and manifolde representaciones, that mercye wolde availe more than penaltie and dethe,—but all in vayne.

Moche contumelie hath ye goode Fathere mett wyth from ye chiefe officeres of ye towere, and after sondrie examinacions before ye Lord Chancellor, three tymes was hee most sorelie rackedd, therebie to cause him to confesse himselfe a traytor, and who were his accomplices, and thatt thei didd procure to murthere ye Queene; but al thys beinge a falsitie, hee, despite of torments, righte stoutlie didde denye yt; nathelesse ye lieutenant of ye towere announcedd to al that, while on ye rack, hee dyd confesse al hee knewe. Divines and churchmenn brought thei to him to leade him into disputacion, sondrie beinge sett oute against one destitute of al propere helpes, and brought almoste to ye brinke of dethe by ye racke; and when theire argumentacion colde nowise prevaile wyth hym, mennacedd thei hym wyth lawes, authoritie, and punishmentes; commandinge hym to silence. Father Bryann, alsoe in ye Towere, beinge sorelie rackedd colde not move hys limbes for fifteene dayes, but straw onlie, wythout bedde or beddinge, was given him whereon to lay. The Fatheres Forde, Richardsone and Cottam, wyth exceedinge pertinacitie, were pressedd by Pophamm and Egertone, ye Queenes Attorney

General and Solicitore, respectinge y^e^ Pope hys deposinge powere, and othere matteres; and obtaininge fro' them no satisfactionn, and failinge to prove theyre treasone, or to cause them to confesse beinge traytores, thei dragged them on hurdles to Tyburne, where thei hangedd and quarteredd them—Sheryffe Martyn even to y^e^ laste leavinge them noe quiett, but biddinge them owne y^e^ Queene hyr spiritualle supremacie; and soche doubtlesse wylle bee y^e^ fate of manie and diverse nowe shutt up in y^e^ Towere and elsewhere, for y^e^ same cause. Manifolde and variouse bee y^e^ tortures inflictedd—somm have needles thrust up thaire nailes. Father Kerbye was oft tymes thruste into a hoope or circle of ironn, wherein was hys bodie foldedd upp—haundes, feete and hedde bounde faste togethere. Thys is y^e^ clep'd y^e^ *Scauvengere hys Dauwghtere.* Sadde, in verie truthe, and pity-full, my friende wryteth to mee, is it to see y^e^ Towere filledd wyth personnes of all ages and condicions, all for onn cause, and eache encouraginge y^e^ othere to beare up agenste y^e^ persecucions and crueltyes practysed uponn them: ofte tymes two priestes are put into celles adjoyning; y^e^ jailere telleth them, as tho' hee

were willinge to indulge them, that thro' a crevise inne ye walle they maye privilie discourse. A spie is thenn placed, and hearinge onlie parttes of ye discourse, reporteth falsities, and thus mattere is afforded for condemnacionn. Thys was Syr Owene Uptone, ye Lieutenant of ye Towere, hys devise; and thus hee at firste entrapped sondrie, but nowe ye prisoneres are aware of hys soteltie. Diverse amongste them, aftere beinge rackedd ofte tymes, are weake in bodye, and no wayes able to undergo moche discourse; thenn are theye sente to Syr Frauncis Walsinghame, who causethe them to bee examinedd in hys presence; hee ofte tymes revileth them himselfe, endeavouringe to cause them to confesse treasonnes and plottinges agenst ye Queene; takinge advauntage of everie worde thatt, thro' weaknesse of bodie, or wearinesse of minde, or lacke of patiaunce, escapeth them. Ye deadlieste of our enemyes, how somever, is ye Lorde Treasurere Cecil, and ye wylieste to surprise those who have ye ill chaunce to bee examinedd before hym; nonn can turne to evill meaninge, or alter a worde to serve hys purpose, like hym. Then it is not ye smallest of ye tormentes thatt ye poore prisoneres have to suffere, thei beinge

compelledd to heare sermones preach'd by y^e^ Queenes ministeres, reviling our holie faithe—turninge textes taken forthe from Scripture to condemnacion of oure doctrines—accusations y^e^ most monstrouse and incredible put forthe agenst us; nor doe thei hesitate—alacke, howe unlike true shepherdes of y^e^ flocke!—to declaier falselie that y^e^ Catholickes can noe wyse answere theyre disputacions, when thei are forbidden to attempte a replye, however foulle y^e^ imputacions put uponn oure religionne. Ofte tymes, unable longer to heare patiauntlie that thei were idolators, and conspiringe y^e^ Queenes dethe, somm have helde forthe to denie it; whenn thei have beene ironnedd wyth double fetteres, and kepte in y^e^ commone dungeone wyth y^e^ loweste of fellons for manie daies; naie, y^e^ Lorde Burleighe, attendinge y^e^ sermonn, thoghte nott to disgrace himselfe by smitinge Maister Danbye, a gentlemann of faire degree, onn y^e^ hedde wyth hys staffe; and for that hee was nott therebie silencedd, two of my lordes gentlemenn, sittinge of eythere syde, he commandedd to throwe hym down, and holdinge forthe hys haundes hee laye as tho' uponn a crosse duringe y^e^ remainge tyme of y^e^ sermonn. Alwaies are y^e^ prisoneres compelled

to attende theese sermonns by ill treatmentes, blowes, and menaces—sparinge nott ye aged, ye infirme, or even ye womenn. Maie Godde in hys mercie protecte and strenghtene themm!

Thys xii. daie of Decembere.—Godde, hys holie wyll be done! Ye swete hope thatt I shal one daie meete in heavene wyth my soe moche esteemedd friende, is my supporte and consolacion under ye heavie greefe wych has fallene upon mee, as also ye ryghte comfortynge thoughte thatt hee has receayvedd ye crowne of martyrdome, and ye happie rewarde of hys soe manifolde goode workes. But styll wolde naturall affeccionne prompte mee to bewaile thatt I am bereavedd of my friende, and for thatt Edmonde Campion too has fallene in our holie cause. I am apprysedd that a monthe past hee was broughte wyth sevene otheres from ye Tow'r to ye Kinge's Benche, when ye bill of indictemente sett forthe thatt in Maie laste, beinge beyonde ye seas, thei had practisedd ye Queenes deposition and dethe, and ye stirrynge up of rebellionne wythin ye realme, and invasionne from abrode. Fathere Campion beinge tolde, when thatt hee was arrayned, to holde up hys haunde

wyth ye reste, hee colde not by reasonn of ye frequente rackinge hee hadd enduredd, wherebye hys armes were pitifullie benumbedd; butt, like ye reste, he pleadedd nott guiltie, sayinge, "I proteste before Godde and hys holie angells, before hevene and erthe, and thys bar, whereat I staunde, wych is but a smal resemblaunce of ye terryble judgement of ye next lyffe, thatt I am nott guiltie of anie part of ye treasonne contayned in ye indictmente, or of any other treasonne whatever." Then lyftynge up hys voyce, hee sayde—"Is it possyble to finde twelve menn so wickedd and voyde of al conscience in thys citye or lande, that wyll finde us guiltye together of thys one cryme, diverse of us never meetinge or knowinge one ye othere before our brynginge to thys bar." Nothynge more was done thatt daie, butt a jurye was empannelledd for ye xx of ye same monthe; and Fathere Campion and hys fellowe confessores were taken backe to ye prisonn whence thei came. Ye sevenne arraynedd wyth hym were Maister Ralph Sherwyn, Maister Luke Kerbye, Maister Thomas Cottam, Maister Roberte Johnson, and Maister Edwarde Rishtone, al priestes of Douai Colledge; as alsoe Maister James Bosgrave, a

younge Jesuitte, and Maister Orton, a laye gentelmann. Next daie, also, in like manner, were arraynedd, Maister Johnne Colletone, Laurence Richardsonne, John Harte, Thos. Forde, William Fylbye, Alexaunder Brianne, and Johnn Sherte, al priestes of y^e^ same colledge. On y^e^ twentieth daie, Fathere Campion and hys companionnes were broughte to receayve judgemente; and, natheless y^e^ commaundes given to y^e^ contrarie, theyre was soche presaunce of people, and thatt of y^e^ more honorable, wyse, learnedd, and best sorte, as was never seene or hearde of in thatt courte. Soe wonderfull an expectacionn was there to see y^e^ end of thys soe mervailouse tragedye, conteyninge soe manie straunge and diverse actes of examinynge, rackinge, disputynge, subornacion of false wytnesses and y^e^ like; as alsoe to beholde whether y^e^ olde honoure of lawe and justyce, wherein our nation hathe of al y^e^ worlde hadd y^e^ prayse, colde or durste nowe staunde its grounde, notwithstandinge anie violente impressionn of pow're and authoritye to y^e^ contrarie. But thys one daie gave to thatt assemblye, and al y^e^ worlde, fulle proofe of y^e^ sadde falle of equitye, lawe, consciaunce, and justyce, together wyth thatt

of the Catholike faythe in oure poore countrye. For naughte there saidd by ye Quene hyr attorneye, solycitore, or othere councillores, or by anie of those thatt were presaunte at theyre rackynge, or by ye subbornedd false wytnesses, Elyot, Cradocke, Sledd, and Mondaye, colde in anie well informedd mann hys consciaunce toche anie of them—everie one, and speciallie Fathere Campion, dyd poynt by poynt prove and declaier thatt thei were guiltlesse; and hys innocencie, in partycular, was so plaine in al mennes syghte, thatt what colore soever myghte be made for ye condemnacion of ye otheres, yet for Father Campionnes none at al; in so moche thatt ye whiles ye jurye was gone forthe, diverse, wise and well learnedd in ye lawe, talkinge eithere to othere concerninge ye verdicte, dyd agree thatt it sholde no waies be possibel to condemne Fathere Campion: but hee speciallie was desygnedd to die, thearefore noe defense colde serve. Ye Jurye dyd thatt wych thei understoode was lokedd for at theyre haundes, and broughte al in *guiltie*,—Maister Popham, ye Attorneye General, havinge plainlye signifyedd to them thatt yt was ye Queene hyr wyll that it sholde bee soe: ye moste unjuste

verdicte ever given in thys launde, whereat alreadie not onlie Englaunde, but al ye Xtianne worlde dothe wondere, and wych posteritye shal lamente and be ashamedd at. Sentence was passedd thatt ye holie menn sholde be hangedd, drawne, and quarteredd; whereupon Fathere Campion and ye reste rejoicedd in Godde, usinge diverse holie speeches of Scrypture to theyre manifolde comforte, and soe were sente backe to prisonne, and there heavilie ironedd. Ye nexte daie ye othere priestes, also arrayned for ye same ficticiouse plotte, receayvedd ye same sentence, save Maister Colletone; testimonie soe loudlie shewynge forthe thatt hee was in Grayes Inn ye daie hee was saide to have beene plottinge at Rhemes, where hee hadd never beene in hys lyffe, thatt for verye shame thei colde not finde hym guiltie: hee was thearefore sentencedd to bee banishedd. A cousene of Ladie Traceis, whoe broughte mee thys dolefull recitall, ofte tymes venturedd into ye prisonne, and spake wyth Fathere Campion, who in godlie and spyrituall exercises was preparyng for hys dethe; shewynge soche admirabell patiaunce, and usyng soche sweete speeches to hys keepere, and otheres that he hadde to deale wyth, thatt

ye same jailere, havynge afterwardes in hys custodye one Nortonn, who hadd wyth vyolence and crueltie persecutedd Campion and hys companiones, drawynge a simylitude of ye differente bearynge of theese hys two prisoneres, scrupled not to declare, thatt he hadd a sainte in hys keepynge, and after thatt a devyll. Cruelle have beene ye ofte repeatedd tormentes endureddby ye holie menn; and, before ye rackinge, Fathere Campion alwaies (ye jailere sayd) felle on hys knees at ye racke house doore, commendynge hymselfe to Godde; ye whiles ye torture lastedd, opinge hys lippes onlie to calle on ye holie name of Jesu; and when ye tormente was endedd, in sweete wordes forgivynge those who rackedd hym, moche to theyre confusionn, and to ye greate mervaile of al who hearde hym;—naie, Fathere Campion hymselfe declaredd, thatt ye laste two tymes hee was soe cruellye torne, thatt hee noe waies doubtedd thei meante to slaye hym in thatt waie—natheless hys helthe and strengthe were not moche impayredd. Mean whyles ye Protestantes desisted not in temptynge hym wyth proffers of lyfe and libertye, to go over to theyre side, or, at ye leaste, to make some stepps towardes them.

Ye Lieutenante of ye Towere tolde hym whoe broughte mee thys dolefull storye, thatt if Fath. C. wolde but yielde to change hys relygionne, hee wolde secure to hym one hondrede poundes by ye yeare. On ye firste of thys monthe was ye laste fytte of thys bloudie tragedie enactedd. Fathere Campion was broughte to ye Cole Harbore prisonne, where Sherwine and Brianne, who were to be hys companiones in dethe, awaitedd hym; and as thei came forthe to be placedd on ye hurdle preparedd for them, Fathere C. salutedd ye croude assembledd wythoute, sayinge—"Godde save ye al—Godde blesse ye, and make ye al goode Catholikes." Thei were drawne fromm ye Towere to Tyburne; sondrie mynisteres and otheres molestynge them by ye waye, and callynge upon them to conforme; whyles other some, when thatt, by reason of ye croude, ye sadde processionne stopped, comfortedd them as beste thei colde, wyth sweete wordes of consolacion and encouragemente—sondrie takeinge counsell of Fathere Campion in matteres of religione and consciaunce, whiles otheres wyth kerchieffs wipedd ye filthe wych ye brutalle croude hadde caste upon ye personnes and habilimentes of ye holie menn. At ye place of exe-

cucionn were awaitinge theyre arryvall diverse of hyr Majesties honourable counselle and manie personnes of honoure, besydes an infinitte multytude of people. Fathere Campion beinge firste broughte into y^e^ carte, after a breefe pause, commencedd to speake on y^e^ texte of Seynt Powle, "We are made a spectacle to y^e^ worlde," but Syr Frauncis Knollys, and y^e^ sheriffes, stoppynge hym, urgedd for thatt hee sholde confess hys treasonne agenste y^e^ Quene; whereupon hee answeredd, "For y^e^ treasonnes wych have beene layedd to my charge, and I am come here to suffere for, I desier ye al to beare wytnesse wyth mee, thatt thereoff I am altogethere innocente." Whereupon answere was made to hym by one of y^e^ councille, thatt hee myghte in noe wyse seeme to denie y^e^ ojectionnes agenste hym havynge beene provedd bye sofficiente evidaunce. "Well, my lorde," saidde hee, "I am a Catholike mann, and a prieste; in thatt faythe have I livedd, and in thatt faythe do I intende to dye; and yf you esteeme my religion treasonne, then am I guiltie: as for anie othere treasonne, I never committedd, Godde is mye judge. But you have nowe what you desier: I beseeche you to have patiaunce, and suffere mee

to speake a worde or two for discharge of my consciaunce." But beinge in noe waies allowedd to go forwarde, hee was forcedd to speake onlie to thatt poynte wych thei most urgedd, protestinge thatt he was innocente of al treasonnes or conspiracie, desyringe creditt to be givedd to hys answeres, "as to y^e^ laste answere made uponn hys dethe and soule:" hee then expressedd hys hartie forgiveness to y^e^ Jurye thatt hadd founde hym guiltye, sayinge thei myghte easilie have been deceaved; also of al otheres, as hee desyredd hymselfe to bee forgyven: explanacion then gave hee concernynge a lettere hee hadd wryttene to a fellowe prisonere, promisinge not to reveale secrettes; y^e^ wych he protestedd were not, as hadd been representedd, treasonne or conspiracie, or anie mattere agenste y^e^ Quene or y^e^ State; but sayinge Masse, hearinge confessionnes, and soche like functionnes of preestehoode, y^e^ wych he protestedd before Godde was y^e^ truthe. Manie questionnes were put to hym, and one askedd hym dyd hee renounce y^e^ Pope? he answeredd hee was a Catholike; whereupon one said, "In y^r^ Catholycisme al treasonne is contaynedd." Then meeklye settinge hym to praye, hee was hindered by a ministere, who

willedd to praye to hym; wyth moche patiaunce hee besought for quiett, askinge al presente of ye householde of faythe to praye wyth hym: then calledd thei on hym to praye in Englishe; he tranquillie saidde, "I praye in a language I well understande." Natheless wolde thei not cease ye conflicte, but urgedd hym to aske pardoun of ye Quene, and to praye for hyr; he saidd, "Whereinn have I offendedd hyr? in thys I am innocente. Thys is mie laste speeche; in thys give mee creditt; I have and doe praye for hyr." Then asked ye Lorde Charles Howarde of hym, "For wych Quene praye ye—for Elizabethe oure Quene?" He answeredd—"Yea, for Elizabethe your Quene, and my Quene;" and ye carte beinge drawne awaie, hee meeklye and sweetlye yieldedd hys soule to hys Godde; hys laste wordes beinge, that hee diedd a perfecte Catholike. Thys sadde spectacle, and hys protestacionnes of innocencye, movedd al presente, evene hys enemies, to teares. Hys adversaryes have synce imprynted workes wherin thei try to excuse ye mattere.

Thys iv. daie of June.—Syr Hubert is grievedd to heare of ye imprisonment of hys frende

ye Erle of Arundel. Havinge, in earlie youthe, livedd moche togethere, thei then met no more for yeares: Phillipp Howarde betakinge hym to ye courte, where hys licentious courses drewe upon hym ye censures of ye wyse and goode, and of none more than hys frende Hubert, who livedd retyredd upon hys estates in ye dailie practyce of ye virtues wych ye othere neglectedd; and ofte tymes dyd ye Ladie Arundel, scornedd and abandonnedd by hyr husbande, envye ye farre happier lotte of ye wyffe of hys frende. Greate then hadde beene Syr Hubert hys joye, when thatt ye lorde Arundel forsooke ye courte and hys viciouse lyffe, retyringe to hys castell, and seekynge ye societye of hys soe vertuouse wyffe. But ye Quenes discontente at thys change in ye Erle became manifeste, and hyr hatredd towardes hys ladie was noe waies concealedd; ye wych causedd in ye mindes of manie suspicionn to aryse thatt ye gallante bearinge of ye Erle had founde favour in hyr Majesties eies—whearfor shee jealousedd hys newe borne affectionn towardes hys wyffe, who thus came to bee speciallie markedd as ye vyctime of hyr Highnes's wrathe. Severall attemptes were made to convycte hym of conspiracies, wych

failedd. Butt when Maister Throgmortonn was takene, ye Erle, albeite noe reasonn was assynedd, was commandedd not to leave hys howse in Londonn, and ye Ladie Arundel was putt in ye custodye of Syr Thomas Shirleye in Sussexe. No guilte colde be tracedd to either, and after iv monthes ye Erle regainedd hys libertie, but ye ladie obtaynedd not hers till a yeare had elapsedd. Al these affrontes were deeplye graven on ye mind of thys ill treatedd Noblemann. Longe hadd hys beliefe in ye newe doctrynes, in wych hee hadd beene traynedd fromm hys birthe, beene shaken by certayne discourses hee hadd hearde, and moche fromm ye argumentacionnes of hys frende Hubert; he thoghte thatt ye ills wych had befallene hym were chastisementes from Heavene, for not havynge professedd ye faythe wych hee knewe to bee trewe. Apprysinge Syr Hubert of theese hys cogitacionnes, thatt trustye frende repayred to Arundel Castell secretlye, havynge in hys trayne a Catholike Preeste, who receayvedd ye Erle and hys ladie into ye Churche. Thys soone got abrode —furnishedd fresh fuell to ye Quenes hatredd of them, and gave newe vantage to his enemies: —in ye nexte sessionne ye Parliamente enactedd

ye firste Penal Lawes. Al thys combynedd to multiplye ye feares of ye Erle, and hee resolvedd to flye beyonde seas. Firste hee indyted to ye Quene a movynge and pithie lettere, wherein hee numberedd ye attemptes hee hadd vainlie made to prove hys loyaltie, or winn hyr Majesties esteeme; as well as ye ofte tymes repeatedd endeavores of hys enemyes to hys ruine; ye ascendancie thei hadd in hyr councilles; ye contumelie hee hadd suffered; ye fates of hys fathere and grande fathere, who, albeite innocente, hadd peryshedd as traytores; and ye penalties where unto hee stoode exposedd for hys religionn: he thearefor saidde, thatt hee trustedd thatt yf hee lefte hyr Highness realmes, wythout licence, shee wolde nathelesse not visitt hym wyth hyr displeasure, ye wych wolde bee to hym ye bittereste of al mishappes.—But hee knewe not thatt ye wyllie Ministrye had besette hym wyth spyes—even hys owne howse was filledd wyth themm, and al hys actionnes therebye knowne. He hadd hyredd a shippe to conveie hym to Flanderes, and hee hadd but juste sailedd when it was boardedd bye a pretendedd pyrate: ye Erle deliveredd into ye custody of Syr George Careye, and soone after committedd

by y^e^ councille to y^e^ Towere; as alsoe hys brothere y^e^ Lorde Wyllyam Howarde, and hys syster y^e^ Ladie Margarette Sackevyl; but on beinge examinedd, y^e^ Erle hys innocencie foiledd y^e^ malyce of hys foes; nathelesse, on y^e^ charge of treasonne, although it bee not provedd, hee is committed to prisonne, wych is rendered more severe than is usualle in soche cases.

Thys xxvi. daie of June.—The cousen of Ladie Tracies mothere, y^e^ moste ill fatedd Erle of Northumberlande, is found dedd in hys prisonn chambere in y^e^ Towere of Londone. Manifolde and dyverse are y^e^ tales putt abrode upon thys soe sadd evente; y^e^ Coronere broghte in y^e^ verdicte *felo de se*, and iii daies afterwardes y^e^ lorde chiefe Baron, y^e^ attorneye and solicitore generalle, eache and severallie haranguedd y^e^ audience wythin y^e^ Starre Chamber, for thatt thei wolde prove y^e^ poore Erle hadd beene guiltie of treasonn, and thatt to spare hymselfe y^e^ contumelie of a publike execucionn, and to preserve y^e^ goodes and honores of hys familie, hee hadd done y^e^ horrid deede. In theese daies of calamitie, when suspicionn is abrode, and lyghtes on al, naughte can befal butt thatt

variouse reportes are banded from mouthe to mouthe; in thys case, when it sholde seeme thatt some foull plaie has beene usedd, rumoure ascrybes to ye Lorde Chancellore Hattone thatt hee contryvedd ye murther; certes ye proofes thatt ye Erle fell bye hys owne hande dyd lacke supporte. Hee was founde to have beene shotte wyth a dagge, or gunne—iii shottes hadde gone throughe hys harte. Yet ye difficoltye to possesse hymselfe of armes in ye Towere, ye servaunte, one Pryce, who was saidd to have conveyedd ye gunne to hym, not beinge broughte forwarde, and ye greate desier of ye courte to prove selfe murdere on hym, confirme in ye mindes of manie thatt hys enemyes, failynge to convicte hym of treasonn, had causedd hym to be murthered. Verilie it seemedd straunge to al when thatt a yeare agone thys noble Erle was caste into prisonne: hee havynge soe stronglie provedd hys loyaltie by raisinge troopes for ye Quene even agenste hys own brothere; nor colde yt be denyedd but thatt ye discoverie of hys professionn of ye true faythe was hys cryme, for thatt from that daie hee became an objecte of suspicionn; for x yeares hee had not beene sufferedd to stirre from ye vicinitye of Londone,

and was constantlye besette wyth spyes; when thatt Maister Trogmortone was arrestedd, one Maister Shelly, a friende of y^e^ Erles, was alsoe takenn, and an avowall of hys, extortedd by feare and threates, causedd y^e^ ruinne of hys frende.

Thys xxv. daie.—Further confirmacionnes of y^e^ suspicionnes, for thatt y^e^ Chancellor has beene too busie in thys late foulle deede. On y^e^ xxth, sodaine orderes were sente to y^e^ towere to remove y^e^ Erle hys keepere; and one Bayliffe, a servante of Syr Crystofere Hattons was putt in hys place; y^e^ same nyghte was y^e^ murthere done *

* * * * *

Each daie nowe teemes wyth suspicionne, rumours, plottes and murtheres; maie Godde have pitie on thys wretchedd lande. *

(Here detached sentences mention the execution of Queen Mary of Scotland.)

* * grievouse and sadde thatt thys poore Quene sholde after soe longe captivitie

* * * * *

a scaffolde * * forfende that

our gracious Majestie sholde have willedd her dethe * * * *
synce ye newes arryvedd, hyr Highnesse dothe naughte but chafe and lamente wyth moche teares and bewailinge * * *
yet manie there bee who saie thys is butt counterfeite sorrowe; certes ye warrante for ye soe dolefulle execucionn was sygnedd by hyr Majestie. Nathelesse * * *
and shee dyd not mayhappe thinke it wolde * * * * *
theyre are, thatt telle of a secret commissyonn to Syr Amyas Powlet * * *
soe thatt ye dethe of ye Scottishe Quene myghte be broghte aboute; yet as yt sholde seem * * * and without
ye knowledge of hyr Majestie * *
Davisonne ys to be putt uponn hys tryall, but talkes loudlie in justificacionn of hymselfe, thatt hee spake to hyr Majestie respectinge ye Quene of Scottes dethe, and after hyr Majestie hadde sygned and given hym ye warrante, hee detaynedd it stil one daie more, beinge lothe to dispatch it, and thinking hyr Highnesse wolde sende agenne for yt. *
* * Sholde this be trewe

* * * * *

Thys xx. December.—By Roberte Mortone comynge on y^e^ mission from Rhemes, I receayve a lettere fromm my worthie friende Father Parsonnes, accompaniedd by hys worke, *Epist. de Persecutione Angliæ*, y^e^ wych I soe longe have wished to see; moche thatt is therein indytedd I have myselfe wytnessedd; butt it contaynedd curiouse mattere concernynge y^e^ sicknesse wych befel at Oxforde y^e^ yeare I first returnedd to Englande, but wych, by reasonne of moche difficoltye in communicacionn, I had hearde but imperfectely recitedd. It seemes that one Rolande Jeakes, a book sellere, havynge beene saidd to uttere wordes agenste y^e^ newe doctrynes, was caste to undergo a cruelle sentence, and al hys goodes were seisedd. After manie monthes of prisonn, hee was broghte to y^e^ bar, thatt hys doome myghte be pronouncedd; when, even in y^e^ Courte itselfe, a sodaine plague broke out amongste y^e^ croude assembledd—dethe seemedd to sitte upon y^e^ benche. Sondrie dyedd in Courte—otheres hastenedd forthe strucke wyth dolefulle sicknesse, and in a fewe houres yieldedd y^e^ ghoste: hondredes dyedd thus; butt those of y^e^ greateste note were Syr Roberte Bell,

chiefe Barone of y^e^ exchequere; Nicholas Barhame, sergeante at lawe, both notedd enemyes to Catholikes; alsoe Syr Roberte Doyley, highe Sheriffe of Oxforde; Maister Harte, hys deputye; Syr Willyame Babingtone; Maisteres Doyley, Wenmann, Danneveres, Fettyplace and Harcourte, Justyceses of y^e^ peace; Kirley, Greenwood, Nashe and Foster, gentelmenn, besydes manie more—almoste al of y^e^ Jurye, who dyedd wythin foure dayes. Straunge was y^e^ breakinge out of thys sicknesse, y^e^ daie after y^e^ tryall, upon otheres who hadd taken parte therein; some getting forthe fromm theyre beddes, possessedd by furye wyth distemper and payne, dyd smyte and dryve fromm them wyth stickes those thatt waitedd on them; otheres jumpedd heade foremoste into deepe wateres; al labouredd wyth violente payne and frenesie—losynge theyre understandinges, memorie, syghte, hearynge, and othere senses; as y^e^ sicknesse augmentedd, thei colde take nothinge—colde not sleepe or suffere anie to tend themm, and stil kepte mervailouslie stronge and robuste even in dethe; menn of diverse complexionnes al fared alike. Y^e^ cholerike were y^e^ more speciallie attackedd, and y^e^ physicianns colde finde no cause or

remedye * * * *

Amidste moche othere matteres of intereste, Father Parsonnes telles mee respectinge y^e^ dethe of Charles, y^e^ brothere to Syr Mathewe Arundell, whome I ofte tymes sawe y^e^ whiles I stayedd at Chydocke Castelle, and who then was moche aboute y^e^ Courte.

(Part of a letter in another hand-writing, probably that of Father Parsons, was here folded in the MS.: it ran thus:—)

"Maister Chas. Arondel saw thinges growe to y^e^ extremitye, as no Catholicke mann myght bee sufferedd to lyve wyth hys consciaunce, hee wente into voluntarye banyshmente, and afterwardes for devocionn, hee wente to vysytte y^e^ holie places of Rome; and fromm thence hee passedd to see y^e^ Kinge of Spayne, Phillippe II., and do hys dutye unto hym, for thatt hee was hys Godde fathere whenn that hee was in Englaunde, and gave hym y^e^ name of hys father, Charles y^e^ Emperor. Hys Majestie nowe receayved hym wyth grete love and favore, and made hym a Knighte; and besides othere gyftes, assygnedd hym alsoe lxxx frenche crownes,

everie monthe, towardes hys maintenance. But Syr Charles returninge after a tyme to Paris, livedd verye lyttel whyle, but gave up hys ghoste moste godlye to hys Creatore." Yt is nowe methinkes vii yeares or so, synce thys worthye gentelmann was put in prisonn for hys faithe. * * * *

* * * * *

Thys vii. daie of September.—Ladie Tracie receavyedd a letter fromm Mistresse Tregian, who seldome can fynde occasionn to imparte newes of herselfe to hyr friendes; for, althoughe thei are, she saies, in noe wyse usedd harshlie, styll are thei moche restrictedd fromm communicacionn wyth anie, albeite yt bee nowe sevenn yeres synce Maister T. was commyttedd to prisonn; and trulye edyfyinge is y^e^ resignacion wyth wych thys soe piouse gentelmann and hys noe lesse worthye ladie seeme to give up al hopes of libertye, and to employe theyre tyme in holie exercyses, and in y^e^ vertuouse trayninge of theyre chyldrene, foure havynge beene borne to them in thatt dismall abode. The Ladie Hunsdone has never ceasedd to shewe Mistresse Tregian, when thatt occasionn servedd, hyr

hartie good wyll; but shee is nowe in trobel herselfe, fearynge leste hyr kinswomann, ye Ladye Talbois, wyffe to Syr Peter Careye, and soe mayhappe by implicacionn herself alsoe, sholde be in peryll, yf yt be knowne thatt one Mistress Margarett Warde, latelye apprehendedd and executed, was waitinge womann to ye ladie Talbois. It seemes thatt Richarde Watsonn, who came fromm ye seminarie at Rhemes, was for a tyme a zealous workemann in our Lorde hys vineyarde; but beinge taken and confynedd in Bridewelle prisonn, ye tormentes he there underwente, and ye horrors of thatt dismalle place, soe wroghte upon hym, thatt hee yieldedd to ye manie solicitacionnes of ye jailer and otheres; theyre promyses of libertye and rewardes prevayledd, and hee attendedd once ye servyce prescribedd by ye doctrynes newlye set forthe. Accordynglye he was let oute of prisonn, but ye tormentes of hys minde and consciaunce were more harde to beare than those hee hadd enduredd in hys bodye. Returnynge then to ye prisonn he soughte a preeste amonge ye manie confessores there confynedd, and unburtheninge hys mynde of its soe intolerabell weighte, hys repentance provyinge sincear,

hee was by y^e^ preeste reconcyledd to our holie Churche, confessyng hys sinne; and for that the desyredd to repaye y^e^ scandall hee hadd gyven, hee betooke hym to y^e^ Brydewelle churche, and in presence of y^e^ peopell assembledd, wyth a loude voyce declaredd that hee hadd done evyll by attendinge y^e^ servyce wych thei calledd moste untrulye y^e^ worshippe of Godde: professynge hys penytence, and thatt hee hadde, by y^e^ blessyng of y^e^ Almyghtie, returnedd to y^e^ folde of y^e^ one trewe churche. Moche indignacionn beinge raisedd at thys soe bold declaracionn, hee was not sufferedd to saie manie wordes, but seizedd and dragedd to a dungeone so straytenedd and so low that hee colde noe waies laie downe in yt, nor yett stande upryghte. Here, loadedd wyth heavye ironnes, thei kepte hym a monthe on bredde and water, whereof thei gave hym soe little, thatt it hardlye kepte lyffe in hym; al y^e^ tyme pesterynge hym wyth threates, or prayeres and supplicacionns, for thatt hee wolde once more bee an apostate. Theese hys sufferynges and constancye were moche talkedd off, and y^e^ Catholickes wolde have compassedd hys escape, butt durste nott venture for verye feare, tyll thys courageouse womann, Margarett

mercye, and wolde pardon hyr, wolde shee but goe to thatt thei calledd ye church, and sue a pardonn from hyr Majestie: shee saidde shee colde aske no pardonn, not havinge in aughte givene cause of anger to ye Quene; and as to contryvinge ye preeste hys escape, verilye she beleeved hyr Majestie herselfe, hadd she ye bowells of a womann, wolde have done likewyse, hadd she knowne ye ill treatmente ye preeste enduredd; and goinge to theyre churche beinge agenste hyr conscience, she colde noe waies doe it, and thatt dethe for soche a cause wolde be ryghte welcome to hyr. Shee was therefore taken to Tyburne, and there executedd—shewynge soche mervailouse constancie to ye ende, thatt al who sawe hyr were moved to admiracion. Thys soe greate courage in a womann causes moche wonder; albeit my kinswomann, Mistress Clitheroe, now 11 yeares synce at Yorke, for thatt she was accusedd of harbourynge preestes in hyr howse, beinge takenn and condemned to dye, met hyr soe cruelle fate methinkes wythe equalle courage—sufferynge ye dredefulle tormente of beinge pressedd to dethe, heavye weightes heapedd upon hyr as she laye on sharpe stones, so thatt shee sufferedd moche, some tyme passynge

ere thatt lyffe was extinguishedd: yet naughte colde shake hyr firme resolve not to pleade; for thatt she wolde not, shee saidd, brynge otheres into peryll by hyr convictionn, or cause ye juryemenn to sinne by condemnynge ye innocente. Hyr sufferynges in mynde too were far exceedynge those of Mistresse Warde, who was not marryedd, whereas Mistresse Clitheroe hearde sentence of bannishmente pronouncedd agenste hyr husbande, and sawe hyr chyldrene of tender yeares, who were lamentynge rounde theyre mothere, sorelye scourgedd, for thatt beinge questionedd concernynge theyre religionn, thei answeredd even as she hadd taughte themm, and thence thei were taken to prisonn; nor colde she heare into whose haundes thei hadd fallene, or what wolde be theyre fate.

Thys v. daie of October.—Ye Erle of Shrowesburye maketh hymselfe daylie more busie in ye persecucionn where wyth ye Catholikes are afflyctedd, but not soe moche methinkes for his owne honor and creditt as for ye benefitt of hys fortunes. Syr Thos. Fitzherberte, an olde frende of Syr Hubert hys father, wryteth to hym in moche trobell, for thatt 11 preestes

havinge beene founde in his brotheres howse at Padley, by ye Erle, who thinkes it noe waies beneathe hys dignitye to turne preeste catcher himselfe: the howse and demeasne were forthwyth seized, as well as al ye goodes, not onlie of Maister Fitzherberte, but alsoe of hys brothere Syr Thomas. Amongste othere thynges ye evidences of landes called Fawkelyffe, ye wych ye Erle hath entred upon, and hath ever synce occupied whollie to hys own use, altho' Syr Thos. can prove thatt hee and hys wyffes auncestors have beene possessed of yt tyme out of mynde. These thynges * * * * being, as Syr Thos. sayes, greater than hys poore estate can suffer, or in anie wyse beare; inasmoche as hee alreadie payes hyr Majestie ye statute of recusancie, being cclx£ by ye yeare, ye wych is more than hys rentes yearlie rise unto. Vainlie has hee ofte tymes complayned to ye Erle of Shrowesburye, to whome he is welle knowne—he can get no redresse. One Harpur, is, yt seemes, th' Erle hys chiefe toole in hys diverse pursuittes of those agenste whom informacionnes are layde; as welle as ye Knyvetons, who wryte to hym to give, as yt were, accounte of theyre

stewardshippe. By menaces or brybes do thei prevayle ofte on ye unhappy soules to attende ye newe fangledd worshipp, where-uppon no farther severities are put in force agenste them. Thei boaste moche of havinge compelled ye aged Mistresse Sherwene, of Roddesleye, to goe to ye service and sermonnes, thoughe shee plainlie saidd yt was onlie thatt shee myghte be let forthe fro' prisonn to returne to hyr olde and blynde husbande, who, by reasonne of infirmitie, and for thatt thei fearedd hys sodayne dethe, dyd thei move hym, thei colde noe waies remove out of hys howse, to prisonn, or to goe to ye church. Under commissionn from th' Erle of Shrowesberie, under hys hande and seale, does Harpur enter personnes howses, and forfeitures and fynes of a suretie followe in hys traine, unlesse hee can compelle an acte of apostacie. Thus dyd he latelie by Maister Powell, whose wyffe and chyldrene had rydden awaie. Maister Danyell at Makleover, whom I knewe at Rhemes, appryses me of thys, and thatt hee was visitted hymselfe, but fayning sicknesse, and brynginge ye Vicar, and some of hys neighbors, thei dyd swear thatt hee was noe recusante; for a yeare agone, from feare of ye worste, he had weaklie

yeelded to goe to y^e^ newe service once. Nathelesse wolde not Harpur bee satisfied, but hee forcedd Mistress Danyell to churche: thence went hee on to my cousene, Mistress Edmontone, at Sawleye, but beinge apprised shee hadd escapedd. Anothere sadde resulte of thys, is y^e^ dysunione in familyes: brothere is set agenste brothere—y^e^ chyldrene agenste y^e^ parentes; whereof a notable instance happened in Februarie laste, or thereaboutes, as y^e^ ladie Harryngtone wrytes to hyr cousene Ladie Tracie, inasmoche as yt has made moche noyse at y^e^ Courte; those even y^e^ moste zealouse in y^e^ cause of y^e^ Quene hyr newe doctrynes, beinge greeved and amazed at yt. Yt seemes thatt y^e^ yonge Syr Godfreye Folijambe, beinge left a minor of tender years, was broghte upp by hys unkell, a creature of Cecills, in their newe doctrynes, and for thatt hys fathere and all hys familye hadd beene Catholikes, hee was counselled to shewe himselfe bittere againste y^e^ faythe, soe thatt hee myght noe waies be saidd to have a leaninge towardes yt. He, thearfore, wyth a kinesmann of hys owne, put himselfe to do th' Erle of Shrowesburye's behestes, and to seeke for recusantes as hee sholde directe: and bethinkinge

hym he colde no better prove hys zeale than by directynge it even agenste those of hys own bloode, he seased upon his own grandame, apprysinge th' Erle thereof in a letter as followes:—"Havinge receaved your Honoures lettere, directed unto me and my cousene Leake, for y^e^ apprehension and committynge of divers Papiste recusantes, mentioned in y^e^ same lettere, I have accordinglye apprehended y^e^ ladie Constance Folijambe, my grandmother, and nowe have hyr in my custodie, whom, by Godde's helpe, I shall safelye keepe and have forth cominge, when shee shall be called for by your good Lordship, or anie other that shalle be in soche behalfe, by hyr Highnesse authorysed or appoynted." Yt is saidd thatt even my Lorde of Shrowesburye is shamedd at thys mattere.

(Here several pages are lost—a lapse of more than a year seems to occur in the MS.: the next pages are much destroyed by damp; detached sentences mention the death of Sir John Arundell at Llanherne, and that his widow and her daughters return to Chidiock Castle, and take up their abode there. The

first date appears to be April 1590, *as the following paragraph refers to the death of Sir Francis Walsingham.)*

* * * * *

Godde be merciful unto hym; fierce and cruelle have beene hys persecucionnes of Christe hys churche; but even as Jesu dyinge on y^e^ Roode prayed for those who crucyfyedd hym, so let us praye for, and even as Xtiannes forgyve, those who spytefullie entreate us. For manie monthes had Syr Fraunciss been moche given to mellancoly; lett us hope thatt repentaunce and remorse were workynge in hys mynde, and thatt

* * * * *

certes hee hadde not benefitted hys worldlie fortunes, nor colde avaryce bee imputedd to hym, for hee dyedd poore. * *

* * * * *

(Here the writing was illegible.)

Thys xxv. daie of October.—I moche feare thatt hyr Highnesse y^e^ Quene has been evill advised in y^e^ puttinge forthe of a proclamacion, y^e^ wych wyll incyte mennes myndes agenste y^e^ authoritye wych is usedd to persecute. To

speake wyth unseemlye violence agenste Christe hys Vicar on erthe, betraies a malyce ye wych can onlie hurte ye cause of ye newe doctryne wych thei seeke to supporte: and to use opprobriouse speeche agenste ye Kinge of Spyane wyll rouse in hys defence manie whose frendes have soughte and founde within hys domaynes ye peace and libertye denyedd to them at home;—unwyse then is yt to put forthe soche documentes, and despotycke are ye enactmentes ye proclamacionn settes forthe:—al householderes to make returns of anie resydynge wythin theyre howses durynge ye laste xii monthes, as alsoe to specifye dyd thei knowe of personnes absentynge themselves fromm ye servyce establishedd by lawe. Severe edyctes alsoe are put forthe agenste ye missionaryes, and speciallye agenste those of ye Society; al harbourynge them sholde, after xxxx daies, suffere dethe wythout benefitt of clergye; al broughte up in forayne colledge or seminarie sholde returne wythin vi monthes, submyt to hyr Majestie and hyr lawes, and take ye othe prescrybedd by ye acte of ye 1st yeare of hyr Majestie, or suffer as in case of hyghe treasonn; al sendinge monies or reliefe to anie of ye Societye, or anie missionarye, or anie college or

seminarie of ye same, will incur penaltie of Premunire; al who, after fortie daies, know of anie of ye Societye, Preeste, or anie Missionarie soever, abydinge within ye realme, and do not discover ye same to some justyce of ye peace, or higher officere, shall be fynedd and imprysonedd at hyr Highness plesure. Alacke, thatt evil disposed councillors * * * * * hyr Majestie, ineytinge hyr to actes * * * * and thus estrange hyr subjectes love and dewtie * * * * *

A.D. mdxci.

Thys xii. daie of November.—My worthye kinsmann, Maister Swythin Wells, is nowe fairlye numberedd amonge ye confessores of our holie faythe—beinge wyth hys excellente wyffe emprisonedd in Newgate, for thatt Edmonde Genninges, who latelie came upon ye mission, was caught evene in ye verie acte of sayinge Masse upon All Hallowes daie at Maister Wells hys howse. Maister Plasden and White, preestes, as alsoe Brian, Lacie, Sydnaye, Hodgsonne, and John Masonne, gentelmenn, wyth Mistress Wells, were presente assistinge, when Topliffe, ye arche preeste-catchere, as hee is called, wyth othere

officeres, brake downe y^e^ doore; sondrie of them presente ran to prevente theyre enteringe tyll y^e^ sacredd mysteryes were ended: one, thrustinge agenste Topliffe, causedd hym to falle downe y^e^ stayre; but hee rose agen, and wyth difficoltye was hee prevayledd on to waite wythoute tyll Masse was over, when thei promissedd to give themselves up to hym—wych was done. Genninges was takene to prisonn even in y^e^ vestementes wherein he celebratedd, and al presente, menn and womenn, in number aboute x, were takene to Newegate, and theyre bookes and Churche stuffe seazedd; and soone after, my friende Wells, who was fro' home when thys soe sadde mischaunce befel, returnedd and founde hys howse ransackedd, and hys wyffe sente to y^e^ prisonne; and goynge to demande of Maister Yonge that shee sholde bee releasedd, and y^e^ keyes of hys howse given backe to hym, wythout more ado hee was sent also to prisonn heavilie ironedd. Nexte daie hee was examinedd, and answeredd thatt hee was not privye to Masse beinge saide in hys howse; natheless hee wishedd hee hadd beene presente thereat, thinkinge hys poore howse greatlye honouredd, for thatt so divyne a sacrifice was offeredd there-

in. Ye justice told hym thatt, altho' hee was not at ye feaste, yet sholde hee taste of ye sawce.

December thys xii. daie.—Ye tryall is endedd, and all are condemned to dye. Manie were ye bittere wordes and scoffes usedd by ye judges on ye benche, speciallye towardes Maister Genninges, for thatt hee was verie yonge, and had chafedd them wyth disputacionn. Ye iii Preestes are pronouncedd guiltie of highe Treasonne, accordinge to ye acte latelie passedd; ye reste of Felonye, for thatt thei aydedd ye Preestes:—al are to dye at Tyburne, save Maister Genninges and Wells, who are to bee hangedd in fronte of Maister Wells hys howse. Ye judges, after pronouncynge sentence, prayedd themm hartilye to conforme to ye Protestante doctrynes, wyth manie assurances thatt thei sholde then fynde mercye, but if not, thei sholde of a certaintye bee broughte to dye: all answeredd, that thei wolde live and die in ye one trewe Romann and Catholike faythe, ye wych hadd ever beene ye faythe of Christe.

Thys xx. daie.—I have learnte ye grievous

newes thatt my frende Wells, along wyth Maister Genninges, has sufferedd dethe in Grayes Inne Fieldes, over agenste hys howse. Moche have thei hadd to suffer synce thatt sentaunce was passedd on themm, by reasonn of ye constante persecucionnes either by threttes or prayers, for thatt thei wolde conforme to ye newe doctrynes—speciallye ye Preestes, and more than al Maister Genninges, for thatt hee was broughte up fro' hys birthe a Protestante, and beinge convertedd in after tyme to ye Churche, thei hadd moste at harte to cause hym to returne to ye doctrynes hee hadd lefte; and hys resolucionn and constancye moche offendinge themm, hee was put in a darke hole wythin ye prisonn, where hee colde wyth difficoltye staund up or lye downe, and wythout anie foode. Here, in praiers and contemplacionn, he sojournedd tyll he was takene forthe to dye. On ye mornynge of ye xth, as thei were broughte oute, a repreeve arryvedd for Mistress Wells, who was lefte in prisonn, sheddinge teares and utterynge loude lamentacions for thatt shee was thus depryvedd of ye crowne of martyrdome. After thatt thei arryvedd at ye Gallowes, ministeres were there to preache to themm, leavynge themm no quiett

evene in theyre laste momentes; nor colde Topliffe refrayne, evene when Genninges was on ye laddere, from urgynge hym to confesse hys faulte, hys Popishe treasonne: whereunto hee answeredd wyth al myldenesse, disclaymynge al purpose of offendynge ye Quene by treasonne, wyth moche pithye reasoninge upon ye mattere; ye wych so angered Topliffe, thatt, scarcelie gyvinge hym tyme to saie Pater Noster, he commandedd hym to be turnedd off; but soe presentlye causynge ye rope to bee cut, thatt ye holye Preeste stoode on hys feete, but lyttel stunnedd by ye falle. Then dyd thei caste hym on ye blocke, whereon thei quarteredd hym, when ye violence of ye paine causedd hym to crie out: and after ye executionner hadd taken forthe hys harte, was ye blessedd martyr hearde to praye, ye wych hondredes standinge bye can vouche for. Maister Wells beinge constrayned to staunde bye and looke uponn these so cruelle tormentes; yet was hee not dauntedd by ye syghte, or led to desyre thatt hys owne dethe sholde be deferred; but wyth impatiaunce dyd hee urge them to dyspatch hym also: thus wyth magnanymitie fynyshed hee hys course.

Thys xii. daie of September.—Syr Hubert is sorelye perplexedd at receavyng tydinges of a straunge maladye, wherewyth hys frend th' Erle of Arundel was seazedd in y^e^ towere, nowe a monthe agone, sodainlye whiles hee yet was at dinnere, havynge beene tyll then in sounde helthe. Y^e^ sawce of a dishe, whereof hee hadd partaken, seemedd to containe some deadlye potionn, forasmoche as a smal dogge dyed forth wythe after lickynge y^e^ platter whereon th' Erle had eaten. * * *

Moche payne dyd hee endure, and he is nowe saidde to bee in a state of soche weaknesse thatt hys ende is thoughte to be neare at hande; but as hee has in al meeknesse borne hys captivitie and privacionnes, dailye offerynge al hys soe manie crosses to hys heavenlye fathere, so does hee nowe supporte hymselfe—passynge hys tyme in prayere. Vaynlie has hee supplycatedd hyr Highnesse for thatt y^e^ ladie Arundel, or any of hys frendes, should bee permittedd to see him. Y^e^ Quenes favore is turned to bitternesse agenste hym; and hee is onlie enjoyned to attende y^e^ Protestante servyce, for thatt he wolde therebye softene hyr Majesties displesure towardes hym. Thys hee wyll not lysten to; and supportes

theese addedd trobells wyth more frequente actes of resignacionn to y^e^ divyne wyll. Y^e^ Ladie Arundel is harte brokene, for thatt shee maye not attende uponn hyr soe ill-fated husbande: but y^e^ Quenes hatredd seemes chieflye turnedd agenste hyr. Naie, hyr Majestie has beene hearde to declaier thatt, were it not for hys soe hatedd wyffe, shee myghte be broughte to pardonn th' Erles manie offences agenste hyr Royalle personn. What these soe greate causes of displesure are, none can guesse. Hys tryall is allowedd by al to have been a mockerie of justice. Notwithstandinge y^e^ eagernesse wyth whych al of y^e^ nobilitie seeke to do plesure to y^e^ Quene, xxv onlie were founde to sitte as peeres to trie hym. Of iii wytnesses broughte agenste hym, Gerrarde and Shelley colde saie naughte; and Bennett, who sente to th' Erle to saie thatt hee hadd on y^e^ racke feignedd to confesse by reasonn of y^e^ tormente, but thatt whatt hee nowe confessedd was for verye drede thatt hee sholde bee rackedd agen; nor colde aughte bee provedd agenste hym. * *

* * * * *

These thinges are nowe moche talked of *

* * * y^e^ Ladie Arundel hyr

charitie and patiaunce are admyredd by al; and hyr lyffe at Arundel Howse beinge, as it were, passedd in actes of alms deedes and pietye, no cause is givene for hyr Highnesses wrathe, altho' manie saie, thatt ye cause wych encytedd ye persecucionn of Maister Tregiaun, and ye hatredd of hys vertuouse ladie * * * * maie in like manner bee ye encytemente of ye severitye shewne towardes th' Erle of Arundel and hys ladie. Bee thatt as yt maie, th' Erles presante state and maladie give moche cause for suspicionn, and * * * agenste ye Quene, and more styll agenste hyr evill advysers.

Thys iv. daie of June.—I was ryghte gladd to receave tydinges of my frende Fathere Henrie Walpole, dated fro' St. Omers, where ye Societie have nowe establishedd theyre seminarie, moche aydedd by ye Kinge of Spaine, who hadd sente a commissionn by Fathere Walpole to ye councelle theyr, in favore of ye seminarie. My harte is gladdenedd by hys recitall of ye properitye of oure seminaries at Seville and Valladolid, where hee hadd been sente by hys superiores, and at ye lattere hadd servedd some tyme as

Vice Rector. Hee hadd latelye, too, passedd by Douai, where ryghte comfortynge was it (he saies) to see y^e^ number of studentes, and y^e^ regularitye and well-doinge of y^e^ colledges. Durynge hys shorte sojourne there, there arryvedd one whoe seemedd to bee as y^e^ firste fruittes of y^e^ martyrdome of Maister Genninges, beinge none othere than hys owne brother, John Genninges, who himselfe impartedd to Fathere Walpole y^e^ recytall howe hys minde was turnedd fro' y^e^ doctrynes wherein hee was traynedd fro' hys birthe, towardes y^e^ faithe. Beinge, hee saidd, in Londone when thatt hys brothere was putte to dethe—hearynge of y^e^ same, he rathere rejoycedd than bewailedd y^e^ bloodye and untymlie ende of hys neereste kinnesmann; inasmoche as hee hopped therebye to be ridd of al perswasionnes wych hys brother usedd towardes hym, touchinge y^e^ Catholike religionne—havinge beene traynedd in greate hatredd towardes Catholicitye, and somewhat inclyninge to y^e^ doctrynes of y^e^ Puritans. Aboute iv daies after hys brotheres dethe, havynge spente y^e^ daie in sporte and jollitie; wearie wyth plaie hee returnedd home, and retyredd to hys chambere. No sooner was hee there than hys harte 'gan to

bee heavie, and hee thoughte in what idlenesse he spente hys tyme. Amidste theese hys cogitacionnes, there presentlye came to hys mynde an imaginacionne of y^e^ dethe of hys brothere, and howe hee had forsakene al worldie toyes, and for hys religionne onlie enduredd tormentes intollerabell. Then made hee wythin hymselfe discowrses concerninge hys religionn and hys brotheres — comparynge y^e^ Catholike waie of lyvinge wyth hys; findinge y^e^ one embracedd payne and mortificationn y^e^ whyles y^e^ othere soughte onlie plesure—y^e^ one livedd stryctlie, y^e^ othere licentiouslye. Where upon, strickenn wyth exceedinge terrore and remorse, hee wepte bitterlye—prayinge to Godde to enlighten hys understandinge soe thatt hee myghte see y^e^ truthe. Greate and infinite, hee saidd, was y^e^ joye hee felte at thatt instante; what reverence dyd hee feele for doctrynes whereof hee scarcelie hadd hearde talke; what exceedinge reddynesse of wyll dyd hee feele to change hys religionn; what heavenlie conceite hadd hee of hys brotheres felicyte in hevenne; naie, hee thoughte hee sawe and hearde hym:—in thys exstasie hee made a vowe, as hee laye prostrate on y^e^ grounde, to forsake kindredd and countrye, and

fynde oute y^e^ trewe knowledge of hys brotheres faythe. Thys vowe hee shortlie aftere performedd—secretlye leavinge Englande, wythoute advertysinge anie hys friendes, and, goinge beyonde y^e^ seas, soughte and was admittedd studente at Douaie Colledge.

Thys xvi. daie of December. — The state of thys countrie dailie gets more disturbedd; persecucionn for conscience sake menaces to destroie pryvatt as welle as publike tranquillitie. Maister Greenvile aryved yester noone, as it sholde seeme, to aske of hys sistere, y^e^ Ladie Tracey hyr helthe, whych theese disquiettes have moche impayredd; but in goode truthe to spie into y^e^ state thatt matteres were in. As I passe for Syr Hubert hys stewarde, walkinge to and fro' y^e^ mansionn in mye tawneye doublett and wyth mye wande of office, I was not markedd; tho' me thoughte, y^e^ firste daie, thatt Maister Greenvile eyedd me some whatt suspiciouslye: but he questionnedd Ladie Tracey harde, as to y^e^ waye in wych she practisedd hyr religionn, and apparentlie wyth soche desyre to discoverr wherein hee colde informe agenste Syr Hubert, thatt y^e^ poore ladie colde no waies

endure it. "Alacke!" quoth shee, "'tis cruelle enough to bee helde up to ye worlde as objectes of scorne and suspicionn; but when those of oure owne bloode also turne agenste us, then it is harde indeede, and sore to endure! Is it not sofficiente, brothere, that you shewe your selfe ye bittere foe to all thatt professe ye Catholicke faithe, that you evene make yourselfe, as it were, ye toole of persecucionn, but that ye must come insidiouslie to entrapp youre syster in hyr speeche, and cause mee to finde an informer yn one of mine owne bloode!" Whereonn Maister Greenvile, moche chafed wyth anger, reproachedd hyr, for thatt shee hadd lefte ye religionn in ye whych shee was borne, and hadd become a Papiste, as hee calledd yt; addinge, whyles a deadlie spyritt of revenge seemedd to come over hym, "Ye shal live to repente your base forsakinge of your faithe, and hee too who ensnaredd you to yt—your Popishe helpe mate: hys softe wordes and base allurementes wonne you from your dewtie—one glaunce from hys eie colde cause you to forgette your fatheres howse, your kinnesmenn, and your Godde. Nowe, lett us see, when your recusancye is punishedd as yt merittes, if ye blewe eies of your welle

favouredd Knighte wyll comfortt you for losse of laundes and goulde." "The testimonie of mye consciaunce wyll comfortt mee," replyedd th' poore ladie, weepinge; "and Godde wyll repay mee a thousande folde for al I lose for hys deare sake. But oh! let not mye recusancie, as yt is calledd, in aught affect ye safetie or ye goodes of mye belovedd Hubert: hee alluredd mee from noe dewtie; all I dyd was of myselfe. Let me conjure you, brothere (and she threwe hyrselfe on hyr knees before hym), in noe waies hurtt mye husbande. Oh, as you hope for mercie your selfe, injure not one who never injuredd you—who cherishes your poore sistere as hymselfe—who is all hyr happiness here on erthe—and who is deere to hyr, farre deerer than ye lyffe bloode of hyr harte!" But thys cruelle mann was not to be movedd. He listedd to hys systeres wordes, and sawe hyr teares faste flowinge, whyle ye sneere of scorne was on hys lippes; and, as hee turnedd to leave hyr, ye unhappie ladie felle on ye grounde in a swoone: he, nevere lookinge backe, mountedd hys horse, and was quicklie out of syghte.

* * * *

* * * *

Wee do feare moche fro' theese threttes.

* * * *

A.D. mdxcib.

Thys xxv. daie of Januarie.—Syr Hubert is apprisedd thatt informacionn has beene layde agenste hym, for thatt hee has sente hys sonne into foreigne partes for educacion, and by ye late acte thys is adjudgedd to be treasonn. Ye commissioners, therefore, require thatt ye striplinge bee sente for, wythin a breefe space, or hee wyll be pronouncedd to bee a traytoure, and delte wyth accordinglye. It is now some six monthes synce Gilberte, ye eldeste sonne, beinge ten yeares olde, was sente to Douaye, for thatt no meanes of educacion is there nowe for Catholikes in Englaunde. Sholde chyldrene bee sente to a publicke schoole in thys countrie, thei are perforce taughte ye Protestantes doctryne, albeit theyre parentes professe ye trewe faythe, and do proteste agenste theyre chyldren learninge other than theyre owne: and thys havinge beene ye case of a Catholicke kinsmann of Syr Hubertes, whose sonne returnedd from schoole tellinge hys fathere that Papistrie was idolatrie, as hee had beene taughte, it was determined to sende Gilberte abrode; and I founde meanes to have hym

secretlie conveyed, wyth my friende Father Southwell, goinge on affayres of ye mission, to Douaye. Never dyd I see Syr Hubert chafed to anger untill nowe. Hitherto had hee borne hymselfe wyth tranquilitie and patience, tho' ofte tymes deeplye feelinge ye brande sett upon our foreheddes—ye suspicionn and contumelie wych nowe is the harde fate of Catholickes to beare; but thys hee colde noe waies submitte to. "Soone," saide hee, "shall wee not have free consente to breathe ye aire of heaven, unlesse wee truckle to ye creede of that false villeyne Burleighe and hys satellites: wee maye not nowe worshippe our Godde as from our chyldhoode wee have learnt to do, for that Shrowesburye and Cecill do telle ye Queene, thatt to believe as all ye Xtiann worlde believed for fifteene hundrede yeares and upwardes, is noe waies to be reconciled wyth our allegiaunce as hyr subjects, and, not contente wyth that, thei wolde nowe spredd theyre new fangled creede thro' oute ye kingdome—not by disputacion or convictionn, but by pervertinge our chyldrenes myndes, and leadinge them up to creditt falsities, and look to theyre parentes as idolateres and visionaries: but wyth mye sonne yt shall not

bee soe: thei maye take lyffe itselfe, but nevere shall hee bee taughte othere than Christ himselfe hath taughte. To Godde I am to answer for my chyldrenes soules, and in ryghte safe custodye wolde thei bee in ye handes forsoothe of Shrowesburye, or belike of Popham ye torturer, to whose cares ye groanes of vyctims on ye racke are as sweete musicke; or of Cecill, ye willyest knave thatt ever yett poured poisonn into a monarches eare—instillinge ye venome of distruste into ye royall minde agenste hyr lovinge subjectes—and why, forsoothe? Why, that hys coffers may be filled, and that ye statelie domes of Burleighe may shine still bryghter, burnished wyth goulde wrung from ye oppressed. By'r ladie! these bee tutors meet for my sonne! A matter of mervayle wolde it bee did I not, wyth reddy zeale, embrace ye occasionn thus soe bounteouslie offered, of instilling into hys yet infante mynde ye vertues of humanitie, honestie, and a contempte of welthe." Vaynlie dyd hys ladie stryve to soothe thys fierce contencion of hys spirit. "Alacke!" quothe hee, "sweete Kate, it is not for myselfe I grieve; were it not for thee and our deere babes, I wolde not heede ye

storme; but, leavinge thys poore realme to be y^e^ preye of knaves and spoilers, my sworde sholde, in a foreigne lande, carve myne owne fortune; but nowe, whyles Shrowesburye and Cecill wyll give leave, here I must abyde to watche over these deere ones. How long I still may be permitted to be wyth ye, heaven can onlie telle! prechaunce my pertinàcitye in thys affayre may hasten on our fate; but be it what it wyll, I needs must meete it. In thys free land of libertye, where none can teache theyre chyldrene what thei liste, it may not longe be given to me to live in mine owne house, or reape y^e^ heritage my fathers purchased." I colde not but approve Syr Hubert hys stronge determinacion, and hee dispatchedd an answere announcinge it in good sett terms to y^e^ commissioneres.

Thys xx. daie of Maye.—One Maister Trevillyan, kinsmann of Syr Hubert, has rydden post, to telle of y^e^ seconde attacke on Chidoke castle, and of y^e^ sadde imprisonmente of Father Cornelius, he beinge takenn there; also Maister Thomas Bosgrave, my Ladie Arundelles neere kinsmann. Hyr sonne, y^e^ Lorde Stourton,

onlie escapinge bye takinge boate and trustinge himselfe to y^e^ openn sea, landinge, after some peryll, at a smalle fishinge towne in Dorsetschire. A false traitore, yt seemes, one of Ladie Arundells householde, informedd Maister Trencharde, y^e^ Sheryffe of Dorsette, thatt Father Cornelius was at Chidioke, beynge a prieste. Whereuponn hee repayreth thythere, sondrie gentlemenn followinge in y^e^ Sheriffe hys trayne, and forthe wythe seazed thei y^e^ Father and Maister Bosgrave, and causinge y^e^ greate Halle to be preparedd as for a tryalle, y^e^ Sheriffe there held, as it were, a courte: to obtaine evidaunce agenste these who wot that y^e^ Father was a prieste, and as it followeth of a suretie, if a Popishe prieste, thenn a traytour, — wyth abundant audacitie he sommonedd y^e^ Ladie Arundell to appear before hym. She, keepinge hyr chamber thro' infirmitie, wolde not come forthe; but y^e^ false knave that informedd y^e^ Sheryffe, witnessinge that Mistresse Dorothye, y^e^ dawghtere, wist of y^e^ Fatheres beinge a priest, she was moste unseemlie compelled into y^e^ Halle. But heere thys noble and vertuouse maidene shewedd hyrselfe worthie of hyr highe descente,

and of y^e^ illustriouse stocke whence shee descendedd. Hyr courage noe waies failinge hyr, but wythe undaunted resolucion denyinge wyth indignacionn whereof thei accusedd hyr and hyr ladie mothere, that thei did harboure traytoures to y^e^ Queene, or that hyr mothere wiste of Father Cornelius abidinge in y^e^ house, for, bye reasonn of infirmitie, shee keepit hyr chambere for manie moneths; duringe wych tyme Mistress Dorothie herselfe causedd y^e^ Father to take up hys lodginge in y^e^ castell privilie; but that traytoure hee was none: and wyth moche dignitie shee defyedd themm to prove y^e^ guilte of treasonn uponn hym. "Tis not hee," added shee wyth moche impassionedd speeche, "'tis not hee that is a traytoure—'tis yourselves. Enforcing to y^e^ utmoste thys rigorous code of statutes, ye betraie y^e^ Queene, by actes of crueltie in hyr name towardes loyalle subjectes, whom neithere persecucionn nor dethe have pow're to impell to one disloyalle wishe agenste hyr authoritie, or agenste hyr owne moste graciouse selfe. Traytoures ye are, makinge, as it were, a cloke of hyr Majesties authoritie to sanctionn youre own despoticke actes. Thus do ye betraye hyr into seeminge what she is not

—a tyrante oppressore of ye weake and innocente, and a persecutore of hyr fellow Xtians. Ryghte wel assured am I, that had hyr gracious Majestie not beene deceivedd, bye those who, like yourselves, finde crueltie a pastime, and fill theyre coffers wyth ye spoiles of victimes, never wolde shee have countenacedd ye enactmentes of theese barbarous statutes, or have given ye unlimited enforcemente of themm to soch as ye. And what are ye fruites of your unhallowedd toyles? Your dungeones are croudedd wyth Confessors of everie age and conditionn: your toweres and stronge places echo to ye groanes of those ye torture, because thei noe waies wille renounce theyre faithe; your scaffoldes reeke wythe ye bloode of martyrs, whiles murder and suspicionn stalke abrode, and highe descente and noble bloode cannot protect ye gentrie of thys lande fromm ye base accusacions of treasonn, tho' it bee proferred by some hirelinge knave who selles hys othe for golde. Al tyes of fellowshippe are broken, and neighboures, friendes and kinnesmenn turne spyes and informe agenste eache othere. Is thys a state meete for a lande of free borne menn? for Englaunde! ye dreade and envye of sur-

fetch hys hat; wych Maister Bosgrave perceivinge, doffinge hys own, hee placed it on ye Confessors hedd, sayinge, "The honor I owe to youre functionn maye not suffer me to see you go bare heddedd." Whereat ye Sheryffe dyd scoffe agenn, and usedd moche unmannerlie speeche to Maister Bosgrave, wych hee nothyng heededd. But wyll I not assaie to indite Maister Trevyllyan hys doleful recitall of ye soe cruell partinge of Maister Bosgrave and fayre Mistresse Dorothye: hee longe had lovedd hyr, but hys lacke of fortune forbade hyr ladie mothere, in prudence, to consente. A goodlie inheritance, nathelesse, had fallen to hym, and hys constancie was soone to be rewardedd; and now thys haplesse paire are partedd, never maye happe to meete againe, in thys so sorrowful worlde. The ladie mothere gave hym a parentes benisone, and forthe wythe dispatshedd a trustie messenger to ye Courte, bearing a wryttenn missive to hyr kinsmann, Syr Mathewe Arundell, for that hee beinge moche aboute ye graciouse personn of hyr Majestie ye Queene, and hyr Highnesse ofte tymes noticynge hym, that hee wolde, if tyme and occasionn sholde serve, riske ye preferinge a peticionn to save ye lyffe of

thys guiltelesse and hopeful younge gentlemann. But thys dyd ye ladie more to soothe ye despairinge griefe of hyr sorrowinge dawghtere, than wythe moche hope of successe. To pleade what is calledd a Papistes cause at Cowrte, is now a peryllouse adventure; and Syr Mathewe, tho' a Catholicke, belike, is too fearful to be calledd Papiste himselfe, to bestyrr hymselfe moche in ye mattere. From Chidioke, Father Cornelius, wyth Maister Bosgrave and ye servinge menn of Ladie Arundell, were hurryedd awaie to ye Sheryffe hys house; Maister Bosgrave and ye servauntes, onlie for that thei were in companie wythe and servinge Fathere Cornelius when that hee was takenn.

Thys xxvi. daie of Maie.—Being Whit Sondaie, wee were joyfull for that wee hadd beene enabledd to performe ye solemne rites of our religionn on thys so grete festival, when a cloude burste upon us, wych wyl, alacke! I feare, be not onlie cause of moche griefe to thys soe worthie familye, but serve, as it were, to ushere in a black traine of others more hurtfull than itselfe. A messenger aryv'd bearinge a warrant from ye Sheryffe: informacions hadd beene

sworne before hym that Syr Hubert had alwaies beene absente fromm y^e^ service as performedd bye one of y^e^ newe mynysteres in y^e^ parishe Churche, accordynge to thys forme of worshipp by acte of Parliamente prescribedd; and by y^e^ late acte passedd in hyr Majesties councyl, all thatt attende not at theyre parish Churche, muste be finedd. In thys case the fine levyedd was heavye—thirteene hondrede poundes sterlinge, to be paide forthe wythe into y^e^ handes of y^e^ commissioner appoynted to levie these fines, and fiftie markes to eache and everie of y^e^ Sheryffe hys officeres, and sixe daies onlie were allowedd to Syr Hubert to paye y^e^ monie, or to do awaie wythe y^e^ penaltye altogethere by attendinge y^e^ newe form of worshippe on y^e^ Sondaie ensuinge. Thys, wyth scorne, hee refused.

Thys firste daie of June.—Syr Hubert havinge taken opiniones from hys friendes, and of one learnedd in y^e^ lawe, paydd y^e^ egregious sum demandedd of hym—havinge wyth moche difficoltye raisedd yt; pawninge some auntient familie plate and my ladies jewelles to an usurere at Exetere; therebye puttinge himselfe to grete distresse: and for that hee nowe foreseeth that

persecucionn is turnedd towardes hys house, and wyllinge to be preparedd for y^e^ worste, hee telles mee that hee has engaged one John Owen, well known as Little John, a laye brothere of y^e^ Societye, who is now traversinge y^e^ countrie in diverse disguisinges; goinge from house to house aidinge y^e^ goode cause, as beste hee maye, by makinge hidinge places wythe moche art and devyse; for that none are sottele like hym in inventinge celles in y^e^ roofes and walles like unto that werein I laie ensconcedd at Chidioke.

Thys xx. daie of June.—By a servinge manne latelye attendynge on Maister Bosgrave, and who has beene releasedd fromm prisonn for that naughte colde be provedd agenste hym, I have receayvedd a lettere fromm Father Cornelius, wherein I too plainlye see thatt hee wyll, ere longe, wyth Maister Bosgrave, bee martyredd for theyre faythe. Hee wryteth to mee fro' Dorchester, thatt, at fyrste, thei were conveyedd fro' Chidioke to y^e^ Sheryffe hys howse, where sondrie Protestante mynysteres attackedd hym on relygiouse matteres; but, as thei colde not but perceayve thatt hee hadd y^e^ strengthe of argumente on hys syde, so y^e^ Sheryffe presentlie,

and in al haste, commandedd al to bee silente. After a fewe daies, y^e^ councyll beinge informedd of y^e^ mattere, y^e^ Fathere and Maister B. were orderedd upp to Londone. There ofte tymes was hee examinedd by y^e^ lorde Treasurer, and hym thei calle y^e^ Archbishoppe of Cantorberye, and manye otheres of y^e^ privye Councyll, who strove diligentlie to extorte fro' hym y^e^ names of Catholikes who hadd harbouredd hym. Hee stoutlie refusynge to discover aughte thatt myghte brynge trobell to otheres—hee was severlye rackedd sondrie tymes, but in vayne—hys constancye was proofe agenste al theyre endeavores: whereuponn thei sente hym to Dorchester, theyre to abyde hys tryall. No wyse does hee seeme to doubte thatt hys dethe is neere at hande, yet does not hys courage faile hym: nor does Maister Bosgrave, hee telles mee, seeme to occupye hys thoughtes save in preparacionn to receayve, as worthylie as beste hee maye, y^e^ final stroke thatt is to cutt hym off fromm al y^e^ bryghte worldlye prospectes wych but so latelye filledd hys mynde. Hee has endytedd a solemne and laste farewelle to hyr hee lovedd so dearlye; and for thatt y^e^ messenger fearedd to take charge of more than one

pacquett, hee entrustes mee wyth ye deliverye of thys so sadd a myssyve—ye wyche a page of Syr Hubert, going to Chydioke, engages to place in ye haundes of ye ladie Arundell and of Mistresse Dorothye. Trulye edyfyinge, in verie truthe, are ye sentimentes of thys yll-fatedd gentelmann, Maister Bosgrave, and ye resignacion wyth wych hee offers up ye sacrifyce of hys lyffe, hys youth, hys al, into ye haundes of hym who gave themm; and tho' hys harte seemes torne wyth greefe at partynge wyth hyr to whom hee was betrothedd, yet stryves hee to lessen hyr sorrow by turnynge hyr thoughts towardes Godde and eternitye; beseechynge hyr henceforthe to place hyr fonde affecionnes onlye in thatt bleste abode where thei maye hope one daie to bee unytedd in never endynge blisse: for there, saies hee wyth truth, and there onlye, wyll ye wickedd cease fromm troblinge—there shal ye wearye be at reste!

Julye ye xviii. daie.—Owen arryvedd disguysedd as a peddlar, in ye wych garbe hee has traversedd grete parte of Englaunde, havinge beene workinge in ye houses of Syr Anthonye Browne, at Cowdrei; Syr Ambrose Gorings, at Burton;

and Syr Henrie Comptones, at Brambletye; in al wych has hee devyssedd sondrie hidinge places, by reason, alacke! that suspicionn and persecucionn daylie spredd ye more. Findinge ye thicknesse of ye walles of ye gallerie to be sofficient, he commenced to scoope out a celle, and to devyse stayres whych sholde leade downe to otheres, contryvinge a doore wyth soche soteltie thatt none myghte see to opene yt unlesse thei wiste of ye springe. I take moche diversionne in watchinge hys progresse and cunninge devyces. Albeit it is a doleful thoughte that soche soteltye be nowe renderedd necessarye in thys our moche persecutedd countrye. I askedd of Owenn where hee hadd learnedd hys art; hee saidd, necessitye hadd taughte hym—first essayinge at Arundel Castell, when thatt ye Erle Phillipp fearedd ye worste, sonne after ye memorabell breache of faythe whereof hyr Highnesse ye Quene was guiltye at Arundel Howse in Londone, where thatt, after a sumptuose bankette, given hyr there by ye Erle, shee ensconcedd hyrselfe behynde ye arras to lyste to a discowrse, wherein, by hyr Highnesse injunctionn, Syr Fraunciss Walsynghame and ye Lorde Hundsdone dyd drawe hym to speake on rely-

giouse matteres, and in ye whych ye Erle so notablie dyd foyle Syr Fraunciss and mye Lorde in argumentacionn, but dyd alsoe clearlie showe hys leaninge towardes ye Catholike faythe, wherebye hee drewe uponn hym ye Quenes displesure, and came to bee an objecte of suspicionn, losynge fro' thatt daie forthe ye Royalle favore, wherin, untyll then, as in a sunbeame, hee hadd layne baskynge. Havynge atchievedd hys worke at Arundel, the Erle sente Owenn on to Brambletye, whence hee hadd neerlye made ye rounde of al ye Catholike families in Sussexe, Hampshyre, Dorsetshyre, and Devonshyre, tyll hee came to Cornewayle. At Maister Shellys, at Michell Grove, made hee hydinge places: thence to Slindon, one Maister Anthony Kempes, who dispatchedd hym to Maister Philipp Caryll at Grinstedd Howse. Syr Roberte Tichborne, then hearinge of hym, sent for hym to Tichborne, and thence to Bambridge, my cousene Maister Swythin Wells, synce martyredd. Hee alsoe hadd beene at Syr Edwarde Waldegraves, at Chewton in Somersetshire; at Maister Thomas Rysdones at Rysdone; at Godmanstone, Maister Cottingtones: thence to Maister Rowes at Leland; Maister Reynolds

at Pinhoe; Kirmans at Blagden; and Syr Willyam Courtneye, at hys statelie castell of Powderhame, who directedd hym to Trewardrethe; but, beinge narrowlie watchedd, hee betooke hym firste across y^e^ countrie, to foyle hys pursuers, and esconcedd himselfe at Dorchester. He founde, in arryvinge theyre, thatt Fathere Cornellius, Maister Bosgrave, and y^e^ two servaunts, havinge beene condemnedd, were to endure y^e^ extream sentaunce of y^e^ lawe. My harte bledd to heare Owen hys soe sadd recitall, havinge witnessedd theyre martyrdome. All mett theyre dethe wyth y^e^ moste exemplarie piety and fortitude—y^e^ two servaunts sufferinge firste, prayinge audiblye, and makinge a professionn of y^e^ Catholike faithe after thatt y^e^ ropes were put aboute theyre neckes. Maister Bosgrave, beinge a mann of excellente wytt and learninge, spake duringe some space to y^e^ people as touchinge y^e^ certaintie of our faithe; y^e^ wych was hearde wyth greate attentionn, y^e^ Protestante ministeres standinge by—yett offeredd thei not to interrupte hym. Fathere Cornelius sufferredd y^e^ laste, prayinge till hee hadd ascendedd y^e^ laddere; thrice hee thenn essaiedd to speake to y^e^ people, but was as ofte preventedd.

Then aloude hee prayedd for hys persecutors, and thatt ye Quene myghte come to ye knowledge of ye true faithe; and, after beinge turnedd off, thei let hym hang but a breefe space, cuttinge hym down and quarteringe hym ye whyles hee was yet alyve; and hys hedd nailedd thei to ye gallows, and hys quarters sett upp on foure poles; till sondrie Catholickes of that towne secretlie tooke themm downe—buryinge themm wyth ye bodies of hys companions.

Thys xx. daie of October.—Owen hath nowe devysedd a celle wherein, he says, a man maye laye ensconcedd for yeares, and none shall fynde hym an hee come not forthe hymselfe. In ye easterne towere is a small chambere called ye ladies bowere, for thatt a storie goes thatt Syr Reginald de Tracie, who firste was seisedd of ye mansionn and domaine of Trewardrethe, Temp. Henrici II., dyd forcibly there detain ye faire Christabel de Foix, ye faireste maide in ye brighte traine of Elinore, Kinge Henries Quene, when thatt shee sailedd to Palestine. Syr Reginalde havinge been woundedd at Acre, when thatt hee dyd capture ye infidel chiefe, and obtained ye creste and device ever synce so proudlie

worne by hys decendauntes, had been attendedd by ye faire Christabel, who, cunninge in medicine, soone wroughte the cure of hys woundes; but, in soe doinge, deeplie woundedd hys myndes tranquillitie. On ye returne of ye Kinge and Quene to Englaunde, Syr Reginald proferredd hys suitt, but was rejectedd. Stung to madnesse by ye maidens scorne, hee vowedd revenge; and, as shee lefte ye court to returne to Fraunce, hyr native countrie, sondrie knightes, headded by Syr Reginalde, surprisedd ye escortt, and Christabel was carriedd to hys howse. Diverse are ye stories of hyr sojournmente there: but it sholde seeme thatt shee not longe after dyed; some saie of a brokene harte, otheres by poisonn ministeredd by a jealouse womann, who hadd followedd Reginalde to ye warres. On hyr dethe hee lefte hys mansionn: some saie to avoide ye suspicionn of murdere some whatt attaching to hym; and hee diedd on a pilgrimage to ye Holie Launde. On hyr dethe-bedd Christabel is said to have utteredd these wordes: "Perforce was I broughte hither; perforce have I abydedd; none but perforce shall sojourn here. Let al beware ye easterne towere: for hee thatt layes hym downe wythin yt, shall close hys eies

for aye." Albeit thys is but a gossippes tale, it has, nathelesse, kepte soe stronge a holde over ye mindes of al, beinge handedd downe from olde to yonge, that none wyll e'er inhabit ye easterne towere: and when wintrie windes moane dolefullie arounde th' howse, then wyll olde nurses bidde ye affrightedd chyldrene liste to poore Christabels sadde shriekes and groanes, and hearken, tyll, in theyre wonderinge eares, thei seeme to heare ye soe moche dreadedd wordes, "Let al beware ye easterne towere; perforce was I broughte hithere." I have vainlie endeavouredd to reasonn wyth ye servauntes and countrie folkes agenste thys so wilde a fancie: thei will not be persuadedd out of theyre credulitie. Even nowe, sondrie of ye menn who worke under Owen hys byddinge, essaie to prevaile on hym not to proceede in thys soe dreddedd chambere—wyth moche seriousnesse assertinge thatt it can bee of no availe, for that none can abide in ye celle when yt is made. But Owenn heedes them not; and, however perilous may seeme ye adventure, of a suretie I shall ryghte gladlie availe myselfe of thys secure place of concealment sholde a searche bee made for mee thro'out ye mansionn.

Thys xxviii. daie of October.—Owen, havinge completedd hys worke, departes. Syr Hubert havinge given hym a lettere to Maister Rawe, who desyres hym to worke at hys howse, Trevythicke: thence hee is to go to Devioc, Maister Hannes; thence to Caerhayes, y^e^ goodlie castell of Maister Trevanionn; after, he purposes goinge agenn to Somersetshyre, to Bearscombe, Maister Chesters; Maister Giffardes at Halsebury; and Blagden, Maister Kirkhams:—soe generall is y^e^ panicke now spredde amongste y^e^ Catholickes.

Thys ix. daie of Novembere.—Cruelle treachcrie is, I feare, abettynge y^e^ attemptes of those who longe have armedd to destroye y^e^ peace of thys once happye famylye. May Heavenn supporte them under y^e^ tryall. An order is arryvedd fro' y^e^ Sheryffe, stryctlye enjoinynge Syr Hubert and mye ladye to conforme to whatt thei call y^e^ religionn establishedd by lawe, in dulye attendinge everie Sondaie and festivall at y^e^ newlye fangledd worshippe—albeit Syr Hubert hadd alreddy paide y^e^ egregious fine of recusancie. Hee is alsoe warnedd thatt hee is accusedd of havynge Masse saidd in hys howse.

Spies, I feare, have longe beene watchinge; and, albeit wee have managedd matteres soe thatt no discoverie has yet beene made, yet is suspicionn abrode: nor can I doubte but thatt ye lacqueye, so moche commendedd by Maister Greenvile, and sente by hym to waite uponn my ladie, is a wylie knave, and upon no goode erraunte. Ofte tymes have I bethoughte mee thatt hee watchedd whenn thatt ye trustie porter securelye lockinge ye outer doores, ye famylye, one by one, secretlie creepe, as it were, upp to ye long chambere in ye roofe, where I celebrate ye sacredd mysteryes. Naie, latelie was I compelled to dryve hym, wyth angrie wordes, forthe from ye wythdrawinge chambere, as hee loyteredd on pretexte of mendinge ye fyer, but in truthe to espye Syr Hubert and my Ladie leadinge theyre chylderne upp ye narrowe stayre, yt beinge Al Hallowes daie, and thatt I was in reddynesse to saie ye holie Masse. One monthe is givene to Syr Huberte to make ye acte of conformitie, as wel as to disprove thatt whereof hee is accusedd —ye Sheriffe also tellinge hym, that hee is saidd to have causedd otheres to eschewe theese newe doctrynes. Nor is thys voyde of truthe; inasmoche as some tyme synce Maister Trevylyan,

in exceedinge panike, for thatt hee hadd beene menacedd wyth imprisonmente, was presente once at y^e^ worshippe by lawe establishedd: whereupponn Syr Hubert chafed moche for thatt hys kinnesmann sholde denye hys faithe for worldlye endes, and hee prevailedd on Maister T. soe thatt he myghte not agen be guiltye of thys soe grievouse faulte; and, accordynge to y^e^ Acte, sholde thys bee provedd, Syr Hubert wyll be imprisonedd fyve monthes, then bro'te into courte, and banyshedd for lyffe; but hys owne contumacie, sholde hee persiste in it, maye be punishedd wyth dethe—banishmente beinge y^e^ lyghtest penaltie for soche offence. Hee ofte tymes has renderedd hymselfe hatefulle to y^e^ partye, by hys noe wise unfeignedd supporte of oure holie faithe; soe it is lykelie thatt he sholde be markedd to bee treatedd wyth severitie as an ensample.

Thys xx. daie.—Syr Hubert has caughte y^e^ knavish laccqueye even at y^e^ doore of y^e^ long chambere in y^e^ roofe, endeavouringe to force yt openn, and findynge hys effortes vaine, essayinge to peepe thro' y^e^ chinkes. Y^e^ better to bee secure from interruption y^e^ whyles y^e^ holye

Masse is celebratynge, Syr Hubert hadd causedd Owen to remove ye floorynge of a narrow passage fro' ye heade of ye stayre to ye longe chambere doore: two plankes then were nailedd togethere; and, when thatt anie wente to entere ye chambere, ye plankes were placedd across, and like, as yt were, to a bridge, and ye laste thatt enteredd withdrew them wythin ye chambere, so thatt none myghte enter unadvisedd: and when thatt we issuedd forthe, ye plankes were liftedd and concealedd under a stepp wych was made to openn purposelye. Ye knave must have espyed thys devyce, for hee hadd drawne forthe ye plankes and placedd them to stande on, but noe wyse apprehendynge thatt Syr Hubert sholde catche hym; and, as hee stoopedd hym to spye thro' ye doore, hys master, sodainlie seazinge ye plankes by ye ende, threwe hym on ye floore —rebukinge hym sharplye. Ye varlette retortedd, tyll Syr Hubert, chafed wyth hys insolent bearynge, smote hym and drove hym downe ye stayre forthe into ye Cowrte. Then stoode ye knave wyth othes and threttes menacynge, for thatt hee hadd seene enoughe in ye longe chambere and else where, to convycte and utterlye destroye hym who hadd daredd to put hym

forthe; and, wyth deadlye malyce in hys aspect, bade al to beware, for thatt hee sholde hye hym to hys lorde ye worthie Maister Greenvile, who sholde know howe thatt hee, who was hys servynge mann, was usedd; and wherefore? why for thatt hee hadd spyedd treasonn and ye breakinge of ye Quenes lawes and commandes. Thys Syr Hubert hearde not, havynge gone to tell hys ladye of ye cause of al ye tumulte wych had affryghtedd hyr, when a servynge mann came to appryse hym of yt. Ye ladie, moche fearynge hyr brotheres wrathe and spighte, besoughte thatt ye villeyne myghte be withhelde fromm departynge—but no where colde hee bee founde. Fleete of foote, and fearynge Syr Hubertes greater anger, hee hadd fledd faste beyonde ye Gate-howse; nor colde anie of those dispatchedd to persewe hym, in anye waies fynde what cowrse hee hadd taken. My ladye forthwythe sente off a page on horse backe, bearinge a letter to Maister Greenvile, settynge forthe ye insolence noe waies to bee enduredd; ye wych hadd incytedd Syr Hubert to put forthe ye sawcye knave. But yt is to bee fearedd that what hee has to imparte wyll in no wise inclyne Maister G. to take Syr Hubert hys parte—

knowinge, as wee do, thatt * *
* * * * and hys
deadlye hatredd to ye Catholike faythe *
* * * * *

Thys xxi. daie.—And now ye storme has burste, Godde in his mercye supporte ye haplesse ladye and hyr infantes, berefte of theyre protector! Ye daie hadd scarcelye dawnedd, when thatt ye page sente to Maister Greenvile, hys horse foamynge wyth heate, rode upp wyth al speede to ye gate howse, hastilie and lowdlie ringynge ye belle. Pacing to and fro ye courte, recytynge Mattyns, I espyedd hym; and, judginge thatt no lyghte affayre promptedd hys so hastye returne, I ranne, and wakinge ye styll sleepinge porter, seazed myselfe ye keye, and openedd ye gate. "Not one momente maye be loste," saidd ye page; "I muste instantlie see Syr Hubert." I quicklie tooke hym to ye doore of ye chamber wych my Ladie hyrselfe openedd; anxious watchfulnesse lightenedd hyr slumbers, and ye first sounde of ye gate howse belle hadd rousedd hyr. Ye page hadd, hee saidd, beene detainedd al daie by Maister Greenvile, who faynedd sicknesse, but thatt hee wolde indyte

an answere to ye ladye hys systeres letter yf ye page wolde awaite but a few houres til ye maladie had passedd awaie. Hee perceayved nathelesse moche doinge in ye howse, servauntes runninge to and fro, manie arryving within ye cowrte; and, under some pretexte, fyndinge meanes to go forthe fro' ye gate, he met rydinge in al haste Hugo, ye laccqueye put forthe fro' Trewardrethe but ye daie before, who, leapynge fro' hys horse, ranne wyth al speede into ye howse. Soone after, yt seemedd as tho' missyves were sente in haste, laccqueys hee sawe settynge forthe on horse backe, and sondrie, havinge ye bearinge of gentrie arryved. Cuthberte ye page, havinge a readye wyt, resolvedd, if that hee colde, to fathom ye cause of thys turmoyle, wych hee colde not but thinke was linkedd, as yt were, wyth my ladies letter to hyr brother; specially as Maister Greenviles sicknesse colde not bee soche as to prevente hys wrytinge, seeinge thatt all who arryvedd forthe wythe repayredd to hys chambere. Hee sawe thatt ye porter was no waies discreete or unwillinge to talke; enterynge therefore into discourse wyth hym, hee askedd for a cuppe of ale, whereof hee tooke care ye porter sholde drinke ye larger

share; one cuppe broughte another, and ye neglectfull doore keeper, throwne off hys guarde, reveayledd to Cuthberte that Hugo hadd longe beene employedd by hys Maister as a spye; that yt was hee who manie yeeres agone betrayedd al thatt hee colde discover in Maister Tregiaun hys householde, and was ye principall agente in seazinge uponn Fathere Mayne; thatt in ye householde thei hatedd hym for thatt he was a spie on ye doinges of al; thatt thei thearfor joied moche when thatt Maister Greenvile dispatchedd hym as laccquey to ye Ladie Tracey, all ye more, said ye porter, whose braine was nowe moche confusedd by ye licquore he hadd drunken, for thatt thei hatedd Papistes, and doubtedd not thatt Hugo wolde soone fynde mattere for informacionn at Trewardrethe; nor didd hee make anie secrette of hys missione. Manie servynge menn nowe came in, and Cuthberte lefte them, hopynge thatt thei wolde talke to ye porter, fro' whom hee doubtedd not to heare al. Nor was hee deceavedd. On hys return hee founde thatt ye Sheriffe and sondrie gentlemenn were thenn shutt up wyth Maister Greenvile, puttinge questionnes to Hugo, who was hearde to saie loudlie, thatt wolde thei but

goe wyth hym to Trewardrethe, hee wolde take themm at once to ye longe chambere, where evidaunce wolde presentlie appeare of ye truthe of al hee saidd; and as a laccquey passed ye doore, hee hearde ye gentelmenn wyth one accorde concerte to set off thithere before ye dawne of ye morrowe, ye Sheriffe beinge furnishedd wyth authoritie for searchinge ye howse. On hearinge thys, Cuthberte ranne for hys horse, and, wyth whatt speede hee myghte, rode thro' ye darknesse, and stoppedd not til hee rang at ye gate howse bell, altho' hys horse for verie wearinesse colde goe but slowlye; moche thearfore didd hee feare thatt he wolde not arryve in tyme to give warninge of theyre approache. Syr Huberte, who hearde ye greatere parte of ye pages recitall, as no tyme was to bee loste, forthe wythe repairedd wyth mee to ye longe chambere; nor wolde my ladie wyth holde her aide; and, attended onlie by ye trustie Cuthberte, for, alack! it now is harde to knowe on whome to relye, wee, as quicklie as wee colde, removedd ye churche stuffe and plate, hastilie stowinge yt into ye cunninge space so sotelie contrivedd by Owen wythin ye thicknesse of ye greate stayre leadynge to ye gallerie, two

stepps liftynge upp and closinge agen, soe thatt none can see. Ye altare beinge onlie made of plankes putt togethere, Cuthberte piledd them upp agenste ye walle, ye large missale, wyth ye othere bokes kept in ye closette on ye backe stayre, I alsoe collectedd and broughte to ye same place, where thei were stoweinge ye plate and stuffe, togethere wyth ye altare stone; but as I wente downe ye stayre, a dreddefull clattere soundedd in ye cowrte, I ranne to ye hidinge place, Syr Hubert and mye ladie were descendinge into ye halle, and I quicklie putt my tresure in safetie, carefullie closynge ye stepps. Scarcelie hadd I pushedd in ye bolte, when a loude voice at ye stayre foote exclaimedd — "Holloa, syr knave, whatt chattels have ye there?" albeit, ere I colde answere, a powerfull haunde aimedd a blowe at ye hedde of hym who spake, and hee felle on ye floore. I ranne downe to ye halle, where a sadd and pittyfull syghte of terrore and confucionn met mye eies. The cowrte was filledd wyth horse menn, ye Sheriffe and othere gentry dismountinge were apprisynge Syr Hubert thatt hee must yielde hymselfe theyre prisonner. Whyles ye Ladie Tracey, espieing hyr cruelle brothere in ye Sheriffe hys

traine, assailedd hym wyth entreaties, whych fyndinge vaine, shee changed to bittere reproaches, for thatt hee sholde himselfe witnesse y^e^ completionn of hys treacherouse dealinges, and joie in y^e^ syghte of y^e^ miserie hee hadd causedd. Fidelitye to y^e^ Quene, hee saidd, and obediaunce to hyr lawes, sholde outweigh everie othere feelinge in y^e^ breste of a trulie loyalle subjecte—al tyes of bloode were severedd in hys minde, whenn thatt Popishe mummeries were esteemedd rathere than y^e^ dewtie owinge to hyr hyghness just commaundes; and soche was hys devocionn towardes hys mistresse and soveraine ladie, that evene as hee wolde cut off hys owne ryghte haunde didd it in aughte offende hyr, soe sholde hys deereste frende or neereste kinnsmann become loathsome in hys syghte, if thei give cause of ever soe slyghte displesure to hyr highnesses minde; moche lesse sholde thei bee guiltie of soche foulle treasonne as thatt wereof Syr Hubert now stood accusedd. "Soche ys mie hatredd of treasonne," continuedd hee, "I wolde gladlie give upp mine owne fathere was hee suspectedd of yt." "An soche be y'r feelinges," said mye ladie, eieing hym wyth y^e^ deepest scorne, "wordes cannott convei y^e^ fulle mesure of mie

pitie and contempte. Out upon yᵉ! false recreante, nor dare to talke of treasonn, yᵉ thatt betraie your owne bloode! Dare not, wyth your irreverente tongue, to speeke of mie deere fathere, whoe, shame for you to think upon, was your fathere alsoe. Oh, hadd hee livedd, yᵉ goode belovedd olde mann, hee wolde have shieldedd from treacherie and persecucionn hys poore dawghtere and yᵉ husband of hyr love, hadd not yᵉ soe dolefulle syghte of hys sonnes misdoinges longe ere nowe laide hys graie haires wyth sorrowe in yᵉ duste."

Mean whiles Syr Hubert was fruitlesslye essayinge to prevayle soe thatt hee myghte not bee taken thatt daie to prisonn, but thatt tyme sholde bee given him; thys wyth greate lacke of courtesye thei refusedd, albeit manie amonge yᵉ gentrye hadd beene hys frendes. Eache momente I expectedd thatt Hugo wolde appeare to directe yᵉ searche in yᵉ howse, but I saw hym not, and learnedd, thatt rydinge wyth speede before yᵉ troope, hys horse had fallene, and thatt hee had broken hys legge; hee was therefore lefte at Launcestone: consequentlie, no searche was attemptedd; enoughe, saidd thei, was there to peryll Syr Hubert hys

lyffe without ye toyle of searchynge. Turnynge fromm hyr hard hartedd brother, ye ladye most tochingly besoughte ye sheriffe, and reasonedd wyth hym, wherefore hee sholde not, on suspicionn solelie, hurry off, like a malefactor, one of hys own degree, known to al there assembledd, and esteemedd for hys fayre character and knyghtlie bearynge: when as ye wordes, peryll Syr Hubert hys lyffe, soundedd in hyr eares, ye pryde and loftie demeanor, wych tyll nowe hadd lyghted up hyr eie, and shewed even in hyr supplicacion, seemedd on a sodaine to forsake hyr, and as ye teares ran downe hyr cheekes, she knelt before theese obdurate menn. And nowe a pityfulle crye soundedd in ye halle; Syr Hubert's three younge sonnes ranne in, hearynge thatt hee was aboute to bee takenn. Ye elder of them, a striplinge yet but of ix yeeres, had seazed a rapier as he enteredd, and callinge forthe thatt hee wolde defende hys fathere, made a thruste at ye sheriffe, who seazed ye chylde's arm, and held him faste, or hee wolde have beene woundedd. Vaynlie struggledd and foughte thys noble boye; hee who helde hym made but a jest of hys impuissante rage, whyles ye younger twayne, espyinge

theyre unkle, entwyinedd theyre littel haundes rounde hys knees, as thei shriekedd for hys aide to release theyre fathere. Ye servynge menn, hedded by Cuthberte (who hadd laide prostrate hym who spyedd me closinge ye hidinge place, a laccqueye of Maister Greenviles), now made an assaulte on ye followeres and groomes of ye gentrie, and in anothere momente more than fiftie of ye hindes labourynge in ye fieldes adjacente, and who hadd caughte ye alarme, came pouringe thro' ye gate howse, loudlie declayringe thatt theyre belovedd maister sholde not be seazed, and a fierce attacke commencedd in ye courte. Sondrie alreadie measuredd theyre lengthe on ye pavemente wyth bloodie sconces, some of ye groomes drewe forthe rapiers, wyth wych thei defendedd themselves, addinge onlie to ye furye of ye peasauntes, ye whyles ye kickynge and plunginge of ye horses no longer wythhelde, increasedd ye confusionn, and theyre loude neighynges, ayded ye noyse; oathes and yelles of defyance mixed wyth ye groanes of those who felle and who lay spurnedd by ye hoofes of ye affryghtedd steedes. When thatt he saw thys, Syr Hubert dartedd into ye thickest of ye fraye, and at ye syghte of hym for whome

thei foughte, ye peasauntrye and laccqueys instantlye drewe off, and a pause ensuedd. Makinge a signe thatt he wolde speake, he turnedd hym to hys faithful bande, loudlie rebukinge them for thatt thei sholde breake ye peace, and make ye courte of hys howse ye scene of broyles and feudes, thus inhospitablye treatinge manie who were theyre neighboures, none of whom had attackedd them, and thys even within ye precinctes of his dwellynge, and offerynge a resistaunce to ye lawes and to authoritye, "wych," saidd hee, "I wyll, by my ensample learne you to obeye, natheless moche do I feele your stronge attachemente, albeit it has shewedd itself in thys unmannerlye zeale. But by thatt love and fealtye wych your fathers' fathers shewed mine, and wych you bear to mee, I commaunde ye to desiste forthwythe, and to return each mann to hys appoyntedd toyle. Sholde yt please Heavenn thatt I shal be founde, as I knowe myselfe to bee, guiltlesse of aughte like treasonne to our graciouse Quene, and free to returne to mye fatheres halles, each and al of ye shal finde thatt in my harte is gravene deepe ye love whych promptedd ye to peryll thus your lyves in mye defence: but sholde Hevenn otherwyse ordaine

yt (and here hys voice grew weake, and ye teare was in hys eie), I bidd ye mye poore frendes, a laste farewel. Continue to my deare wyff, youre honoredd ladie, ye servyces and dewtie thatt ye owe hyr, shewinge thatt in your hartes yr lorde styl lyves, however distaunte hee may bee, by a lyvely remembraunce and obediaunce to hys laste commande, by a steddy adherence to hys stricte beheste. And yt is this: whatever bee ye lawes, obeie themm even wyth alacrytie; love and honore above all ye Quene; to hyr ye owe yr utmoste loyaltie; shewe yr obediaunce to Godde, by yr dewtie to hyr whose power on erthe is even as a type of ye Almightie puissance. Departe then in tranquillitie, wyth my hartes wyshes for yr welfare; but departe not tyll, wyth one voyce, ye joyne wyth mee in shoutinge to ye skyes, longe lyve ye Quene." Thenn doffed thei theyre cappes, and cried as he enjoyned; but when ye shoute was endedd, wyth teares faste runninge down theyre ruggedd cheekes, eache on hys bendedd knee, pouredd blessinges on theyre moche lovedd maister, utteringe soche deepe lamentes and wailynges, wyth prayers for hys helthe and safetie, thatt al, e'en those who

seemedd ye moste to wysh Syr Hubert ill, were movedd to greefe, whyles ladie Tracie, mid ye sobbes thatt chokedd hyr speeche, cryed, "Yet thys is ye traytoure ye wolde beare to prisonn; this is ye mann compassinge ye safetie of ye Quene, and ye destroyinge of hyr authoritie and lawes." Syr Hubert, too moche movedd to speake, waivedd hys haunde to disperse ye crowde, and one by one al silentlie wythdrewe. Hee then wyth dignitie turned to ye sheriffe, sayinge, "Syr, I surrender myselfe yr prisoner." Durynge ye broyle in ye courte, I had wythdrawne ye chyldrene into ye deepe baye windowe of ye halle, wyther theyre weepynge mothere hadd followedd, and whyles ye scheryffe and gentrie gave orderes for departinge, Syr Hubert advancedd to take a longe, mayhappe a laste farewel of al hee lovedd on erthe. Resolving not to add to ye greefe wych runge hys harte, ye ladie wipedd hyr teares, and turnedd towardes hym wyth an aspecte calme and composedd, askinge of hym how thatt shee beste colde order hys affaires in hys absence, as well as what colde be done towards aidynge hym in theese so perylouse straites. As she spake, I advancedd towardes ye sheriffe, and besoughte hym thatt

tyme sholde be given thatt Syr Hubert myghte leave directionnes to y^e^ ende thatt hys affayres mighte not suffer by hys imprisonmente. At firste y^e^ sheryffe essayedd to carrye matteres wyth an hyghe haunde, and wolde not suffer anie further discowrse to proceede betweene Syr Hubert and hys ladie unhearde by himselfe; but wyth angere I appealedd to y^e^ gentrie thear presaunte, and thei reasonedd wyth hym, tyll hee seemedd shamedd to interrupte themm; "But," saidd hee aloude, and wyth moche impatiaunce and lacke of courtesye, "I shal permyt none to leave y^e^ halle tyll I have y^e^ prisonere safelie in custodye, noe escapes shal be concertedd, as eftesoones thei wolde bee, didd I let thys recusante convycte to departe forthe fro' mie syghte, nor shal I let thys secrette converse laste moche longere." Syr H. and hys ladie heededd not thys petulante mann, but continuedd in whisperyinges theyre soe sadde discourse; at laste when a horse for Syr Hubert had beene made reddy, and thatt al was preparedd, y^e^ sheriffe wolde noe longere tarrye. I therefore wente to appryse y^e^ haplesse paire thatt thei muste parte. Syr Hubert hys yonge sonnes cravedd theyre fatheres benisonne on theyre

knees; he caughte them to hys breste, tellynge themm to be dewtyful to theyre mother, and to cheryshe and comforte hyr. Catchinge my hande hee saidd in mie eare, "Bless and praye for mee, Fathere; obtaine for mee patiaunce under trobel, resignacionn to y^e^ wyll of Godde, and courage to beare up; but speciallye praye thatt not in thoughte, worde or deede, I maye betraie mye holye faythe, or give its enemies to thinke thatt losse of goodes or lyffe can fryghten a trewe catholike from y^e^ dewtie hee owes to hys Godde. Remaine wyth my poore wyffe, comforte and councell hyr, praye for hyr and wyth hyr." Here y^e^ brutale scheryffe wolde no furthere staye, sayinge, "Methinkes you have tolde your stewarde enoughe;" and was liftinge hys hande to plucke hym by y^e^ doublette, when, wyth eies thatt shotte lightninge, Syr Hubert drewe himselfe up to hys fulle heighte, and givinge a looke wych dauntedd even thys violente mann, then turninge fromm hym, caughte hys ladie in hys armes, commendinge hyr to Godde, and biddynge hyr to bee of goode cheare, y^e^ whiles hys cheeke was blanchedd—and moche dyd hys lookes belye hys wordes, when thatt he essayedd to speake of comforte wyth quiveringe

lippes and faulteringe voyce. Yet didd thys noble ladie sustaine hyrselfe, sayinge, "Farewel, my honouredd and belovedd husbande; happy are ye to suffere in a cause soe juste; and in a few daies I shall be wyth ye; nor feare but thatt ye Godde for whom you nowe suffere thys tribulacion, wyll give me courage to endure." Here ye sheryffe, wyth unmannerlye interruptionn, saidd hee knewe not thatt she wolde bee permittedd to enter ye prisonne; shee answeredd not, but lookinge at hym wyth disdaine, spake even wyth a smylinge countenance in a lowe voyce to Syr Hubert, who seemedd, as he tore himselfe from hyr embrace, as tho' hys harte was pluckedd forth fro' hys breste. Movedd at al hee hadd wytnessed, and belike shamedd thatt otheres sholde see hys syster suspectedd hym of foulle playe towardes hyr husbande, Maister Greenvile came wyth a sorrowful demeanor towardes my ladie, mutteringe hys sorrowe for al that hadd happenedd, and extendinge hys hande, whych shee threwe from hyr wyth scorne and loathinge; but, turninge towardes hym, shee saidd, "Yet wyl I not parte from you in a manner unmeete for a Xtian. May Heavenn pardon you, as I do from mie

harte; and may Hee in whose handes are y^e^ myndes of al, turne you in mercye from y^e^ errours of your waies, and teache you repentaunce for y^r^ treacherie and persecucionn practysed even towardes one who ever hadd met you wyth y^e^ kyndness becominge y^e^ husbande of your syster. Of a suretie I shal wyth ernestness unceasynge praye for you, mye guiltye, mye unhappye brother, thatt soe your owne malyce and evill doinges maye not turn on y^r^ own devotedd hedde. Farewel." And hastilye y^e^ ladie ascendedd y^e^ stayre, and traversynge y^e^ gallerye thatt crosses y^e^ halle, I founde hyr lookinge forthe fromm y^e^ oriel thatt surmountes y^e^ porche, with fixedd eies upon y^e^ troope of horsemenn in y^e^ cowrte. Syr Hubert was in y^e^ midst, y^e^ faithfulle Cuthberte vaynlie essayinge to followe hys maister, wych, after moche debate, was denyedd to hym. Syr Hubert, turninge as hee rode beneathe y^e^ gate howse arche, to take one more glaunce at y^e^ faire halles he was aboute to leave, belyke for aye, spyedd hys ladie and chyldrene at y^e^ oriel; stoppinge hys horse, hee gazedd upon them, kissynge hys hande, then raisynge thatt and hys eies to hevenn, y^e^ gentrie followinge, closedd inn

and shut hym from our viewe. As ye trayne wounde slowlye beneathe ye arche, ye ladie sighedd deeplye, yet sat motionless like a carvedd image, eagerlye followinge with hyr gaze ye sadd processione movinge downe ye rowe of oakes, and issuinge forthe uponn ye roade to Launcestone, tyl a suddenne turne concealedd yt from hyr sighte. Then hyr limbes shooke as wyth a palsye, she claspedd hyr childrene to hyr harte, but seemedd as tho' she colde not speake, nor colde comprehende aughte thatt I saidd; hyr eies became glassy, and shee sat fixedd, tyl I fearedd for thatt hyr braine sholde turne wyth thys soe heavie weighte of woe. I withdrewe ye childrene, admonishinge them to speake to hyr of theyre father, of hys imprisonmente, hopinge thatt theire innocente speeche and endearmentes wolde rouse ye unhappye ladie. Nor was I deceayved. After a tyme shee seemedd to heede theyre voyces, startedd, as fromm a dreame, and risinge, pacedd ye gallerie wyth hurried steppes, callinge wildlie on hyr husbandes name. "Hubert, mie belovedd, wherefore have you lefte me to ye mercye of a pitylesse crewe; wherefore leave your helpelesse childrene in ye power of bloode thirstie wretches,

more cruelle than ye beastes of ye wildernesse. Yes, weepe, poore orphann babes, for yr fathere has forsakenn ye; and soone wyll ye be bereavedd of yr unhappie mothere; ere longe I feele mie harte wyll breake in twaine. Yet now, I bethinke mee, Hubert, mie owne deere husbande, never wolde hee have lefte us thus; beshrew mie tongue that e'er it sholde have uttered forthe soche treasonn of mie Hubert. Yes, nowe—I remember al—thei tore hym from mee, thei ledde hym forthe a prisoner from hys own halles!" Shriekes and sobbes chokedd hyr speeche, and ye poore ladie felle on ye grounde, wringinge hyr haundes, tearinge hyr hayre, and for a whyle berefte of sense. After a tyme, beinge carryedd to hyr chambere, she became tranquille, and sente for mee. I founde hyr at prayer, deeplie bewailinge ye wildnesse of hyr greefe, and thatt shee hadd not, at ye firste, beene patiauntlie resignedd to ye wyll of Godde; "To wych, holie fathere," saidd shee, "I most ernestlie desier in al thinges henceforthe to conforme; praye, then, for mee and wyth mee, thatt I may gaine strengthe to do so, as well as courage and discretionn needfulle, for orderinge al towardes ye helpe and reliefe of mie

so deere and moste misusedd husbande." Longe I remainedd wyth ye afflictedd ladie, but I hadd ye comfortte to finde that prayer and spirituall cogitacionn soothedd and calmed hyr; and ere I left hyr, hyr courage rose as shee discoursedd of hyr firme dependaunce uponn Godde, and on ye variouse meanes wych were presented to hyr thoughtes, as tochinge what colde be done to ayde Syr Hubert.

Thys xxii. daie.—Ye morninge had scarcelie dawnedd, whenn Cuthberte knocked for admissionn at mye chambere doore, beinge sente by hys ladie to saie thatt shee was departinge for Launcestone. I hastenedd to hyr, askinge to accompanie hyr, wych at ye firste shee refusedd, for thatt I myghte peryll mine owne safetye; and when I rejectedd thatt plea wyth scorne, ye ladie besought mee to thinke thatt, were aughte to befal mee, none wolde be leffte on whom shee colde relye to see to ye orderinge of theyre affaires, or watche overe hyr younge sonnes durynge hyr absence. Nathelesse, as I broughte to hyr memorie, thatt al knowing mee butt as Syr Hubert hys stewarde, mye safetie colde no waies be endangeredd; naie, thatt yt

wolde seeme straunge didd a ladie of hyr degree ryde into ye towne unattended; shee bade mee instantlie prepare to followe hyr; and ere ye daie hadd waxedd olde, wee hadd arryved at ye hostelrie at Launcestone. Ryghte gladde was I to see thatt ye poore ladies greefe noe longer dauntedd hyr spyritt, or shewedd it selfe in hyr bearinge; but as wee journeyedd, shee spake moche of thankfullnesse to Godde, who hadd mercifullie restoredd hyr courage, and inspiredd hyr wyth resolucion to undertake al thatt sholde be founde possibell to ayde hyr husbande. Naie, evene wyth cheerefulnesse shee discowrsedd concernynge meanes wherebie councelle colde bee procuredd, whatt thei sholde bee chieflie to pleade; "And," added shee, "I muste bethinke me of ye dauntlesse courage of my soe worthie frende Mistresse Tregian, al thatt shee underwente and stil endures in a deare husbandes cause; nor maie mie womannes vanitie permyt thatt I sholde bee outdone, or thatt ye dawghtere of Syr Eustace Greenvile, and ye wyffe of Syr Hubert Tracie, sholde shewe lesse resolute bearinge in ye houre of peryll, than otheres as daintillie bredde have shewne; thatt houre of peryll, too, beinge in a soe worthie cause, and

ye safetie, ye lyffe belike, of a soe excellente, so lovedd a husbande perilledd therin."

Thys xxviii. daie.—At ye laste, successe has crownedd our earneste endeavoures; but for manie daies I despayredd of ye poore ladies beinge admittedd to Syr Hubert. Ye Sheriffe was resolute to denie hyr—bribes and promyses to ye jailere were of no avayle—when Maister Trevyllan arryvedd, well nyghe dementedd at thys soe sadd evente, and forth wyth went in al haste to Maister Greenvile, whoe hadd retyredd to hys howse neere Kilkhamptone, willinge to seeme no waies concernedd in hys sisteres trobells, yet noe waies willinge to help hyr. Thei hadd, Maister T. afterwardes tolde mee, moche disputacionn, til hee assuredd Maister Greenvile that al in ye countrie wolde think shame of hym dyd hee not endevoure to prevayle wyth ye Sheriffe, soe thatt Ladie Tracie mighte at ye leaste bee allowedd to vysitt hyr husbande, a boone soe seldome deniedd. Movedd at thys suggestionn, Maister G. arrivedd at Launceston, and, after seeinge ye Scheriffe, came to hys systeres lodgynge, tellinge hyr thatt nathelesse hee hadd not beene treatedd by hyr wyth ye affec-

cionn meete to bee shewn to a brothere, inasmoche as shee unjustlie lookedd on hym as ye chiefe cause of Syr Hubertes mishappe, stil that hee hadd strivene harde to helpe hyr, and hadd obtainedd leave for thatt shee sholde passe dailie two houres in ye prisonn wyth hyr husbande, butt thatt eache daie shee muste bee contente to bee searchedd, leste shee sholde convei to hym letteres or anie meanes of escape. Forgettinge, at thys joiefulle hearinge, that aughte of unkindnesse ere hadd shewne itselfe in hyr brotheres conducte, shee thankedd hym wyth tendereste wordes of love and gratefull feelinge, soche as, if hee hadd a harte, muste fayne have touchedd hym sorelye; and, hardlie waitinge ye whiles hyr page and hyr gentelwomann, as wel as myselfe, colde accompanie hyr, shee hastenedd up ye steepe streete, and was soone at ye castell gate. Presauntlie shee was usheredd into a chambere where ye jailere hys wyffe attendedd to searche hyr and ye attendinge gentelwomann, ye page Cuthberte and I followedd ye jailere, who wolde plaice hymselfe in an outere roome, soe as to lyste to Syr Hubert and hys ladie theyre discowrse. I reasonedd however wyth hym, wherin I was joinedd by hys

wiffe, whose fathere, I was ryghte gladd to finde, helde launde under Syr Hubert, dwellinge not farre fromm Trewardrethe, and whoe, duringe a grievouse sicknesse, hadd receavedd moche helpe and comfortt fromm ye charitie of ye goode ladie: thys ye dawghtere was fayne gratefullie to beare in mynde, and finallie shee causedd hyr husbande to leave ye roome wyth hyr. Ye Scheriffe hadd enjoinedd hym to keepe watche over theyre discowrse, but hee colde saie thatt hee hadd beene in ye outer roome, and consequentlie seeme to have obeyedd hys orderes. Aftere a tyme, Ladie Tracie calledd mee in, and I joiedd to fynde Syr Hubert welle in mynde and helthe, and not ill lodgedd for a prisonne, beinge in ye selfe same roomes wherin Maister Tregian abydedd soe longe. Afterr moche discowrse concerninge hys affayres, Syr Hubert willedd mee to devyse some meanes, colde anie bee founde, wherebie hys iii younge sonnes myghte bee safelie conveyedd to Douaye, whithere theyre eldeste brothere was sent a year agone and upwardes, for thatt hee is uneasie leste thei falle into badd haundes; besides, as Syr Hubert is devysinge meanes to put hys laundes in truste, so thatt hee maie goe to fo-

raigne partes, sholde hee gett welle throughe hys presente trobells, hee wolde wishe to have as fewe as myghte bee of hys childrene wyth hym: ye youngeste, beinge but a yeare olde, muste abyde wyth its mothere, but Fraunciss, Hubert, and Eustace, maye nowe profitte of ye instructionnes of ye soe learnedd menn teachinge in ye Colledge.

Thys xxix. daie.—Returninge to Trewardrethe, I was ryghte gladde to finde an occasionn sent by Almi'tie Provydence to enable me to sende ye iii younge boyes in safetie to Douay. A lettere fm mie excellente frende Fr. Southwelle, nowe in ye thirde yeare of hys captivitie in ye Towere, where hee has enduredd moche, havinge beene rackedd x tymes, kepte for a longe space in a noisome dungeone, deprivedd of al propere foode, til hys fathere peticionnedd, and ye Queene desiredd hys lodginge and meates sholde be bettere orderedd; stil have not theese hys sufferinges impededd hys workinges in ye vineyarde of ye Lorde—havinge at tymes hadd accesse to otheres alsoe imprisonedd, he has turnedd theese opportunyties to ye accounte of theyre soules good, and preachinge has confirm-

edd manie in y^e^ truthe, bringinge alsoe otheres into y^e^ folde of Christe hys Churche,—whereof amonge y^e^ lattere was one Maister Spencer, sonne to one who hadd longe beene in prisonn on a charge of employinge y^e^ publike monies in usurie, hee havinge been employedd in mie Lorde Burleighe hys offyce. Hys sonne hadd beene welle and carefullie trainedd by hys mothere, an exceedinge vertuouse ladie, and hadd made hys studies at Oxforde, so to fitte hym for beinge ordeinedd mynistere of y^e^ newe doctryne. Duringe a yeere paste hee oft tymes had visyttedd hys fathere; and meetinge F^r^. Southwelle, felle moche to talke wyth hym on religiouse matteres; nor was itt longe ere y^e^ lyghte of truthe brake in upon hym; and, but secretlie, for verie feare of hys frendes, evene in F^r^. Southwelles straightenedd chaumber in y^e^ Towere, was hee receaved into y^e^ trewe Churche of Christe: whereuponn determininge to devote hymselfe to y^e^ mynistrie, hee fainedd a desier to travel for a breefe space in foraine partes—intendinge to go strait waies to St. Omers, whence hee wolde accquainte hys frendes wyth hys resolve. No suspicionn thearfore attachinge to Maister Spencer, hee has desyredd F^r^. South-

welle to entruste hym wyth soche despatches to St. Omers, or elsewhere, as hee myghte not care to confyde to ordinarie conveiaunces; and, havinge hearde of yt difficoltie under wych y^e^ Catholikes labor of conveiynge theyre childeren to y^e^ forainn colledges, he moreover has tolde F^r^. S. thatt hee wyll obtaine a passeporte, as for himselfe and iii younge kinnesmenn, and will see to y^e^ safe conveyaunce of thatt numbere of striplinges, sholde anie of y^e^ gentrie knowne to F^r^. S. bee willinge to committ theyre childerne to hys custodie. Verilie, Providence is kinde, thus offeringe so apte an occasionn wherebye I maye send theese poore youthes:—al thatt remaines is to devyse how to withdrawe themm fro' y^e^ howse, soe thatt none maie suspecte.

Thys xxiv. daie of Januarie, m.d.lxxxvi.—Thankes bee to Godde, mie harte is relievedd of a righte heavie burthenn, havinge hearde even of y^e^ arrivall of y^e^ younge sonnes of Syr Hubert at Dunkirke. Y^e^ newes wyll gladden y^e^ mindes of y^e^ poore parentes; to telle themm of it, wyll be as a goodlie newe yeeres gifte to themm, and for thatt purpose I shall repaire to Launcestone on y^e^ morrowe. Wel knowinge thatt spyes

were about, I thoughte it wolde be difficolte to get y^e^ chylderne forthe fro' Trewardrethe; apprysinge themm of my reasonnes, thei, beinge shrewde for theire yeeres, aidedd mee in whatt precautionnes I thoughte necessarie, and thei lefte not y^e^ howse for manie daies, soe thatt itt myghte appeare straunge to none whenn thei were departedd, sholde thei nott bee seene at theyre wontedd gambols in y^e^ pleasaunce, a deepe snowe, too, affordinge pretexte for theire confynemente. Alsoe I tooke councell of Cuthberte, on whom I knewe I colde relie, and hee forthwythe suggestedd whatt has soe happilye succeededd. Hys Mothere Margery, (y^e^ soe trustie and moche attachedd olde servaunte, whoe hyrselfe nursedd Syr Hubert, and whose fathere followedd olde Syr Hubert in K. Henries warres as standarde bearere) hee colde, hee saidd, answere for, thatt shee wolde laie downe hyr liffe, iff neede bee, to serve hyr soe belovedd maisters chylderne; on hyr discretionn, too, wee myghte fullie depende.— Aftere some daies, hee returnedd f^m^ Falmouthe, havinge gott al thinges in reddynesse; a sistere of hys motheres dwelte there. Hee hadd bro't wyth hym y^e^ attire of iii peasaunte gyrles; in

theese hee attyredd y^e^ striplinges, and, at nighte falle, wrappedd in a cloke, one by one, hee carriedd themm forthe thro' y^e^ posterne thatt leades f^m^ y^e^ pleasaunce to y^e^ woodes, where Dame Margerie awaittedd themm, and wyth Cuthberte ledd themm to hyr dwellinge in y^e^ oute skirtes of y^e^ parke. Nexte daie shee sett forthe wyth themm, and, aftere manie daies of toilesome journeie, conveyedd themm to hyr systeres, y^e^ widowe of a victuallere in y^e^ suburbs of Falmouthe. Returnynge speedelie to advyse mee of thys happie beginninge of y^e^ plotte, I sente a lettere to Maister Spencere, y^e^ whych Cuthberte himselfe, ridinge poste haste to Londone, conveiedd: and concertinge wyth him, he returnedd to Falmouthe, where hee founde y^e^ stryplinges wel and in safetie. Once more donninge themm in theire owne habilimentes, hee engagedd y^e^ maister of a tradinge vesselle bounde for y^e^ Porte of Londone, whithere a faire wynde soone conveyedd themm; and to an inn not farre f^m^ y^e^ Towere Wharfe, where Maister Spencer met themm, and in ix daies more thei sayledd in a Merchauntes vessell to y^e^ porte of Dunkirke, y^e^ faithfulle Cuthberte losinge not syghte of hys soe preciouse charge

til hee sawe themm ryghte safelie laundedd, whenn hee returnedd forthwyth to bringe y^e^ soe gladsome tydinges.

Thys xxvi daie of Januarie.—At yester noone I passedd wyth Syr Hubert and mie ladie. Theire joie and gratytude to Hevenn for its proteccionn of theyre yonge sonnes was moste gladdeninge to see; thei declaredd thatt soche notedd successe havinge waitedd on thys firste enterprise, it was manifeste thatt al wolde yet goe wel wyth themm. Y^e^ fayre openn browe of Syr Hubert was placid and calme once more, whyle y^e^ smyles of hys ladie beamedd uponn hym as thei were wont to do in hys owne deere home, ere greefe and persecucionn hadd besett hym. Cuthberte, too, and olde Margerye, came to receave theire share of thankes and commendacionn; and Ladie Tracie retainedd Margerye at hyr lodginges, soe thatt shee myghte fromm tyme to tyme attende hyr at y^e^ castell, and thatt hyr olde eies sholde bee gladdenedd wyth y^e^ syghte of hyr deere childe, for so y^e^ olde crone styl calles Syr Hubert. Cuthberte returnedd wyth mee to Trewardrethe.

Thys v daie of Februarie.—I have beene to Launcestone, where mie ladie remaynes in close attendaunce on Syr Hubert; but yesterdaie, on goinge thithere, I was greevedd to finde fromm Maister Trevyllyan, who hadd beene to London seeking to procure councell for Syr Hubert, whoe, it is nowe certayne, wyll be triedd at y^e^ Springe Assyze, thatt none colde bee founde to undertake y^e^ poore gentelmannes defence; y^e^ crie is nowe so ryfe agenste y^e^ Catholikes, thatt none care to meddle in so desperate a cawse, and soe signallie displeesinge to hyr Ma^tie^, and al att Cowrte or in powere. Naie, y^e^ guilte (if guilte it can bee calledd) of Syr Hubert wyll bee soe easie to prove, soe manie wytnesses can bee calledd; soe artefullie has y^e^ trayne beene laidd to entrappe hym, thatt, moche I feere, al defense wyl bee needlesse; speesiallie as y^e^ knave Hugo is recoveredd f^m^ y^e^ mischaunce thatt befelle hym as hee rode to Trewardrethe: hee sweares vengeaunce agenste Syr Hubert. And Maud, y^e^ jaileres wyffe, secretlie hadd besoughte mie ladie to warne hym thei calledd y^e^ stewarde, in as moche as hyr husbande hadd hearde howe Hugo talkedd of y^e^ craftie Jesuite thatt was at Trewardrethe disguysedd in a

tawneye doublett, and calledd Maister Stewarde, and thatt hee lookedd to catche hym nexte tyme hee was to bee seene in Launcestone. Syr Hubert thearfore willedd mee to returne to Trewardrethe, after nyghte falle, and chargedd Cuthberte to see to ye reddinesse of ye hydinge places, so thatt I myghte ensconce myselfe, sholde ye howse bee agenn vysittedd. Ye poore gentelmann was more downcaste than I hadd evere seene hym, not so moche for hys owne affayres, as for thatt newes hadd been broughte to hym, by Maister Trevyllyan, of ye dethe of hys longe sufferinge and moche esteemedd frend, Philipp Erle of Arundel, in hys prisonn chaumbere in ye Towere. Trulie maie thys noble gentelmann bee calledd a martyre for hys faithe—for hys faithe alone has hee soe longe beene kepte in prisonn, depryvedd of ye sighte of hys neereste and deereste relatives. Hys moche sorrowinge wyffe besoughte in vaine to vysitt hym when hys infirmitie encreasedd, and in ye moste tocheinge mannere hee conjuredd hys keeperes to lett a belovedd wyffe bee wyth hym, were it but to close hys eies;—and despyghte of ye contumelie wych hyr Matie for yeeres has heapedd on hyr, yet dyd ye ladie Arundel besett

y^e^ doore of y^e^ Quenes chaumber at Whitehalle wyth dailie supplicaciones, til hyr Ma^tie^, waxinge exceedinge wrothe, turnedd to y^e^ captaine on guarde, wyth a myghtie othe, demaundinge was shee y^e^ mistresse in hyr owne palaice, thatt beggares, whome shee hadd commaunded to bee putte forthe, sholde stil bee founde evene in hyr presaunce chaumber; and, spurninge y^e^ poore ladie as shee knelte, askynge onlie to have leave for one shorte howre to watche besyde hyr dieinge husbande, y^e^ Quene calledd hyr a bolde and sturdie beggare, and bade hyr nevere agenn there to shewe hyr face. Mean whiles, wyth moste sweete wordes of charitie, forgivenesse of al who hadd done hym wronge, and moste holie commendacionnes of hys soule to Godde, y^e^ blessedd confessore breathedd hys laste—never haveinge recoveredd of y^e^ sore sickenesse wych afflyctedd hym some yeeres synce, and wych was saidd to bee causedd by poisonn. Moche is thys noisedd abroade at Londone, Maister Trevyllian saidd, and but vaynlie do thei stryve at Courte to stoppe y^e^ busie tongues thatt are nymbell in y^e^ mattere.

Thys xxvi daie of Februarie.—I have kepte

mieselfe a close prisonner to ye howse synce I laste returnedd to Trewardrethe: iv of ye hydeinge places have been preparedd, so thatt at ye firste alarme I can ensconce myselfe; and in noe waies daringe agenn to replace ye altare, and saie Masse in ye longe chaumbere, I have onlie venturedd to celebrate ye holie mysteries on Sondaies, in one of ye secrette roomes leadinge fro' ye gallerie, and cutt in ye thicknesse of ye walle, permittynge onlie v or vi at a tyme of ye poore peasauntrie to assiste. Cuthberte ofte tymes comes fro' Launcestone, but hys tideinges are noe waies cheeringe. Ye assyze tyme approaches, and noe counsell can by anie summ of monies, howevere large, bee broughte to consente to pleade Syr Hubert hys cawse; and dailie, personnes talke more confidentlie thatt hee muste bee founde guiltie, and suffere ye extreame penaltie of ye lawe. I cannot but suspecte thatt mie ladie's reddie wytt and actyve spirytt are at worke to procure hym aidd, or, mayehapp, hys escappe:—shee has, yt seemes, partlie thro' ye wyffe, partlie by winninge converse, totallie wonn overe ye jailere, once soe sterne and uncourteouse; and hee permitts hyr nowe to passe neerlie al daie in ye Castell, take-

inge wyth hyr Maister Trevyllian or Cuthberte, or sometymes bothe. Nathelesse, what perplexes mee is, thatt a weeke agone, ye fathere of Maude, ye jaileres wyffe, goinge to Launcestone, was tolde by hys dawghtere, who seemedd in moche concerne, thatt ye poore gentelmann colde noe waies longe endure; hys helthe dailie waxedd worse, and hys sicknesse hadd broughte hym to soche weaknesse thatt he colde scarcelie walke, and hee hadd movedd ye pittie of sondrie gentrie of ye towne, whom at diverse tymes hee has latelie seene, to confer wyth respectinge hys tryal; yett of al thys Cuthberte has saidd naughte.

Thys xxviii daie.—My ladie came heere yester morne, to searche for apparelle pertayning to Syr Hubert; nor colde I understaunde whearefore shee muste needes take wyth hyr a newe and trymlie cut sute, nevere yet worne, moche laide in wyth goulde broiderie, ye veste beinge of goulde tyssue, fayre to see, but wyth ye bryght murreye colouredd doublette, and hose pinkedd and slashedd wyth whyte: it is gaie attyre, more meete for a Cowrte thann a prisonn, as I tolde mie ladie: shee repliedd, wyth gladsome smyles,

thatt if it pleasedd Godde it sholde, nathelesse, serve in a prisonn. Moche as thys perplexedd me, stil more dyd hyr demeanoure when I askedd of Syr Hubert hys helthe, sayinge howe thatt I hadd greevedd to heere of hys so sadd infirmitie. "Doubtlesse," quothe shee, "ye have beene tolde hee can noe waies walke wythoute aide; of a suretie hys weaknesse muste bee greate,"—and thereatt she laffedd: when, seeinge mie exceedinge wondere, shee put hyr finger to hyr lippes, sayinge—"I needes muste bee silente; albeit, beleeve mee, Fathere, I wolde faine have y^e counsell, and bee guidedd by it; and if I aske it not, it is for no othere reasonn than thys—I wyll not denie thatt I am devysinge a plotte whereonn dependes mie lyffe and happinesse, and thatt some peril attendes it. Whearfore is it, thatt moche as I desier to profitt of youre advyce, I wil refrayne, havinge made a fulle resolve to perill none but myselfe, save those who wolde not but bee busie in y^e mattere, and withoute whome I colde not acte mie devyces: but nowe, come whatt wyll, on mie hedde onlie, I truste, wyll falle y^e peryll. Sholde wee faile, otheres wyll bee safe; for myselfe I feare naught; but wyll I not make you privie to y^e mattere,

leste I sholde bringe harme to y^e^ Pastor, of whome hys poore flocke dailie needes supporte and aidd. Farewel, thenn, holie Fathere; agen I commende mee to y'r prayeres; drawe downe y^e^ blessinge and y^e^ helpe of Godde uponn mie cawse, and al wyll goe wel. Maie happe, when nexte wee meete, wee shall joyne in thankes to y^e^ Almi'tie powere for y^e^ aide hee wyl in mercie have grauntedd;—anothere weeke, and if thatt mie spyritt and courage be thus mercyfullie sustainedd, thear maie stil be happinesse thys syde y^e^ grave." And, kneelinge for my benisonn, wych wyth hartie goode wyll I gave her, y^e^ ladie mountedd hyr palfrey, and, followedd by y^e^ trustie Cuthberte, returnedd fulle speede to Launcestone.

Thys i. daie of Marche.—Moche do y^e^ heavie newse I have learnt to daie adde to y^e^ drearynesse of mie so solytarie lyffe. F^r^. Pole, nowe servinge y^e^ missionn at Caerhays, y^e^ Castell of Maister Trevanyon, has founde meanes to sende mee tydinges of y^e^ soe cruelle Martyrdome of mie excellente and wel belovedd frende, F^r^. Southwelle, after beinge kepte close prisoner yn y^e^ Towere att Londone these iii years. Hee

latelie despatched an epistle to y^e^ lorde tresurer Cecill, humblie beseechinge, or to bee put upon hys tryalle, soe thatt hee myghte answere for hymself, or thatt, at y^e^ least, hys frendes mighte come to see him. Whereupponn y^e^ lorde treasurer made answare thatt, "as hee was in soe moche haste to bee hangedd, hee sholde quicklie have hys desier." Whearfore, speedilye afterwardes, orderes were givenn for thatt hee sholde bee movedd to Newgate, where thei putt hym yn a dungeonge calledd Lymbo, so straytenedd thatt hadd hee not beene takenn thence yn iii daies, hee muste have dyedd. He was putt on hys tryal, where hee fayredd as mighte bee lookedd for, when Maister Pophame sat lorde chiefe justice; who, so soon as y^e^ holy F^r^. was brought yn, made a speeche of bittere revylinge agenste al Missionarye preestes, speciallye those of y^e^ Societie; forasmoche as thei were, hee saidd, y^e^ contryvers of al y^e^ plottes and treasonnes, y^e^ wych hadd beene hatchedd, as hee pretendedd, duringe hyr Ma^ties^ reigne. Then was redde y^e^ bill of indyctemente; and y^e^ grande Jurie havinge founde y^e^ bill, F^r^. S. was askedd was hee guiltye or not. Whereupponn, courteouslie makinge obeisaunce to y^e^ judges, hee

denyedd thatt hee was guiltie of aughte like treasonn to y^e^ Queene; thatt never didd hee entertayne plottes or designes agenste hyr sacredd Ma^tie^ or hyr governmente; thatt hee hadd y^e^ honor of beinge ordaynedd preeste of y^e^ moste holy Catholike churche; wherefore returnedd hee dalie meete thankes to Godde, and calledd hys moste holie Name to witnesse thatt hys onlie end in returninge to Englaunde, was to minister y^e^ Sacramentes accordinge to y^e^ rytes of y^e^ churche, to soche as desyredd themm. Duringe y^e^ tryall, moche opprobriouse speeche was usedd agenste hym by Maister Topliffe, thear presente. Soone was hee founde guiltie, and taken backe to Newegate, y^e^ overflowinge joie of his harte, at hys approachynge Martyrdome, plainlie shewinge yn hys lookes and gestures. Agen hee was put into that soe cruelle dungeone, whear hee hadd beene at y^e^ firste, and whear he passedd y^e^ nighte (y^e^ laste thatt hee was to passe on erthe) in prayere, for betymes nexte morninge was hee takenn to Tyburne; and for thatt thei fearedd a crowde sholde witnesse y^e^ dethe of thys servaunte of X^te^, forasmoche as yt hadd beene founde thatt theese (nowe alacke soe frequente) Martyrdomes

wroughte moche on y^e^ mindes of those who sawe themm; thearfore orderedd thei thatt a noted thiefe sholde be hangedd at y^e^ self-same tyme in another place, soe thatt people myghte bee drawne thear rather than to Tyburne; natheless, manie and sondrie of y^e^ gentrie were thear. Beinge arryvedd in y^e^ carte under y^e^ gallowes, F^r^. S. spake, prayinge for mercye of Godde, protestinge himselfe a Catholike, and a preeste, and moreover of y^e^ societie of Jesu, returninge thankes thearfore; whereupon hee was desyredd to holde hys peace by a Minister of y^e^ new doctryne thear presaunte, tyll y^e^ staunders bye silencedd hym in hys turne, willinge to heare y^e^ speeche of F^r^. S. who proceededd to denie anie treasonn usedd towardes hys sov'ragne ladie y^e^ Quene, in thoughte, worde or deede, prayinge earnestlie for hyr Ma^ties^ wel fayre in thys worlde and in y^e^ nexte, and for hys poore countrye, thatt it mighte receave y^e^ lyghte of truthe, and prospere in al worldlie goodes, and finalye, thatt hys dethe myghte strengthene in y^e^ faithe hys Catholike brethren. Then makinge y^e^ sygne of y^e^ crosse, hee liftedd hys eies to heavenn, saying, *In Manus tuas*, and other shorte sentences of praier, tyl y^e^ carte was

drawne off; when, by wante of skyll in ye hange-mann, ye rope beinge tyedd wronge, longe was yt thatt hee seemedd to suffere; mean whyles hee crossedd hymselfe often; and whyles hee yet movedd, ye executioner fayne wolde have cut ye rope, but ye gentrie presaunte, callinge Holde! wolde in noe waies permyt him, soe thatt ye accustomedd quarteringe was not done tyl ye holie mann was quite dedde,—and gone, I trust, to praie for us whom hee has lefte toylinge in thys soe wearyesome pilgrimage, soe thatt we maie patiauntlie endure as longe, and all thatt ye Almitie ordaynes.

Thys vi. daie.—Moche does anxietie hourlie augmente. Ye Assyzes wyl be holden wythin a breefe space: I can heare of noe counsell cominge to pleade for Syr Hubert—al is silence—and soche ys ye unquiett state of my minde, thatt I passe ye live longe houres at ye windowes of ye olde towere, eagerlie watchinge ye roade fm Launcestone, and hopinge to see some one cominge thence, soe manie daies havinge passedd synce Cuthberte has beene here, and I dare not leave ye howse.—O Godde, protecte mie soe lovedd frende!

Thys viii. daie.—As I passedd betymes thys morninge alonge y^e^ gallerie to y^e^ little oratorie in y^e^ celle, I sawe from y^e^ windowe, Cuthberte, like one besyde himselfe, runninge acrosse f^m^ hys motheres dwellinge thro' y^e^ pleasaunce, speedilie hee enteredd y^e^ howse, and forthwythe hastilie came into y^e^ gallerie, exclayminge, "Reverende Fathere, on your lyffe, and as ye pryze y^e^ safetie of mie ladie and thys howse, go into y^e^ celle belowe, and styr not thence tyl ye heare agen f^m^ mee.—Al is wel, Godde bee praysedd; y^e^ moste perylouse parte is fairlye achievedd; and O thatt mie poore ladie were but safe! styll Godde wyll, I feele, protecte hyr,—but hyde y^r^ selfe Fathere. I have given stricte charge to Gervase; younge as hee is, I am sure of hym; hee wyl see to y^r^ welfare, tyl yf thatt yt plese Godde I shalle returne;" and, as hee spake, ere I colde aske hys meaninge, hee was gone. Loudlie I calledd, for blessedd Christe hys sake, tell mee of Syr Hubert! but answare was none; and yn an instaunte more I sawe hym on hys fleete roane darte thro' y^e^ gate howse arche-waie, nor had I collectedd mie thoughtes when hys younge brothere Gervase cominge to mee, besoughte for thatt I wolde ensconce my-

selfe, for thatt Cuthberte had tolde hym al dependedd on mie not leavinge ye celle tyl hee returnedd. Noe waie doubting, but thatt most pressinge reasonnes were there for thys injunctionn, I descendedd ye stayre, followedd by Gervase, who was bearinge a large baskett of provisionnes into ye innermoste celle, and goinge to and fro sondrie tymes, broughte ye bedd furniture, and quicklie orderedd ye garnishinge of ye small chambere, so thatt yt bore markes of comfortte; then broughte hee Syr Hubert hys large furredd doublett, wych by reasonn of ye colde, and for thatt I colde have noe fyer, I was full fayne to donn. I thenn despatchedd hym to mie chambere for mye bokes and papers, ye wych he saidd hee was ryghte gladde to hyde, for thatt sholde a searche be made, thei myghte betraye us. I askedd hym dyd hee knowe whearfore hys brothere came and wente soe hastilye, hee saidd, No, thatt Cuthberte hadd sente for hym, ye daie before, to Launcestone, and there hadd gyven hym al and everie directionn how hee was to see to mie welfayre, how to carry mee provisionnes and necessaries into ye celle, how to ope ye secrett doore, and how to demeane hymselfe, soe thatt none in ye howse sholde knowe of ye

celle, or thatt I was thereinn, as alsoe what to saie sholde anie come to searche y^e^ howse; al of wych, y^e^ stryplinge, beinge by Nature shrewde, seemedd fullie to comprehende; I feel, thearfore, entyre securitie yn hys care. Hee saidd thatt Cuthberte hadd beene, seeminglie, moste busie al daie at Launcestone, and hadd gyven Gervase hys sute of travellinge apparelle to take to hys mothere old Margery's dwellynge, and sente hym oute of Launcestone as yt grewe duske, chargynge hym to remayne at hys motheres, and to awaite hym there; and an houre or so before y^e^ dawne, Gervase was awakened by hys brotheres voyce, but didd not thinke yt colde bee hee, as a talle woman, as soe yt seemedd, entered y^e^ roome wyth a lanthorne, and laffynge moche at Gervase hys mervayle, saidde, "Mie kirtle is farre too shorte, nor wyll my bodyce meete athwarte mie shoulders, natheless, mie dresse becometh mee well," and throwinge backe a hoode thatt hunge over hys face, Gervase sawe hys brothere under thys disguisinge. Naught, however, wolde Cuthbert reveale y^e^ wych colde explayne thys mummerie, but yn al haste throwinge off y^e^ womannes gear, y^e^ wych hee enjoynedd hys brothere ryghte

carefullie to conceale amidste their mothere's cloathes, hee donnedd y^e^ sute of travellinge apparelle, and sendinge Gervase to equippe and make reddy y^e^ swifte steede, hys trustie roane, he ranne to y^e^ howse, and spake to mee in y^e^ gallerie; and as hee gallopped off, hee tooke not y^e^ roade to Launcestone, but y^e^ longe bye lane thatt leades towardes y^e^ coaste. Nothinge, therefore, more beinge to be knowne, I muste needes be patiente, and, hopinge soon to heare of those whose welfayre is see deare to mee, relye on y^e^ divine protectionn, and praye thatt yt maye shelter and preserve them.

Thys xiii daie.—Blessedd bee Godde! for greate are hys mercyes to those thatt truste in hym, and wyth a stronge arme dothe hee deliver themm f^m^ y^e^ haundes of theire enemies; ryghte wonderfulle, too, is y^e^ strengthe wych hys Almi'tie powere can give to y^e^ weake, who seeke fromm hym alone y^e^ aidd nevere wythheldde f^m^ earneste prayere.—Yesternoone I scarcelie knew whethere thatt I was to rejoyce or feare, as venturinge to pace y^e^ gallerie for aire, I crossedd y^e^ passage thatt runnes alonge y^e^ halle, and, standinge for a momente in y^e^ oriel above y^e^ porche,

I sawe sondrie on horsebacke turne fro' ye roade and ryde towardes ye gate-howse. Not knowinge whatt myghte befalle, I returnedd to mie celle and shut ye doore, hearinge ye porter ope th' gate-howse doore, and ye horses feete in th' cowrte. Soone aftere moche heavie treadinge of feete I hearde thro' out ye howse, to and fro ye gallerie and staires, under th' roofe and in ye halle and roomes belowe, openninge and shuttinge of doores, and moche loude speeche and brawlinge: longe didd thys laste, til, as ye eveninge closedd in, I hearde th' halle doores shutt. Al was silente in ye howse, and, as I oped my doore into ye gallerie, horses feete agen soundedd in th' cowrte, and swiftlie I hearde themm departe, whenn, as ye noyse dyedd awaie, methoughte, I hearde mie ladie hyr voice; and, two servinge menne bearinge lyghtes before hyr, righte joiefulle I was to see hyr advaunce, greetinge mee wyth a joiefull mien, and desieringe mee to followe hyr into ye wythdrawinge chambere, at ye doore whereof shee tolde Gervase to remaine, so thatt none myghte lyste to oure discowrse. Whenn wee were alone shee firstlie droppedd on hyr knees, sayinge, "Fathere, joine wyth mee in renderinge hartie thankes to

th' mercifulle Godde, who has protectedd mie soe belovedd husbande, and given mee strengthe to doe mie dewtie. Yes, holie fathere, praisedd bee y^e^ Almightie," saidd shee, as y^e^ teares ranne f^m^ hyr uplyftedd eies, "mie Hubert is deliveredd out of y^e^ haundes of hys enemies; stil, nathelesse, must wee praie for hys safetie, for al is not yett done. Hee is farre forthe fro' hys prisonn walles, but perylls stil muste be encounteredd, and a stormie oceaun must bee traveredd, ere mie harte can reste in y^e^ blessedd assurance thatt hee in truthe is safe: albeit I feele entyre truste in Him who rules y^e^ waves and wyndes, and a voyce fro' wythin seemes to speake comfortte to mie soule, and saie, Be stil and see thatt I am Godde." Then droppedd shee her hedde uponn hyr claspedd haundes, and for a whyle was loste in silente prayere. Havynge thus quietedd hyr perturbedd spyritt, she rose. "And forasmoche," saidd shee, "as I knowe you are impatiaunte, Fathere, to heare howe thys soe happie chaunce has befallene, I wyll nowe explaine whatt I saidd when laste I sawe you, thatt I withhelde onlie for thatt sholde it faile, you myghte not falle undere suspicionn. You muste of a suretie call to mynde,

at y^e^ laste vysitt you made at y^e^ prisonn, howe sadde was y^e^ heavie weighte thatt seemedd to presse upon Syr Hubert hys spyritts, nor colde aughte rouse hym to y^e^ taske needfulle of puttinge togethere al thatt mighte be pleadedd by hys councell on y^e^ tryal; and when thatt Maister Trevyllian or mieself essaiedd to urge hym to y^e^ affayre, he wolde answer naughte, butt thatt in straightes like hys Godde alone colde aidd hym; y^e^ witt of mann wolde bee of noe avayle; thatt it were needlesse toyle to calle togethere mattere for defence, when none wolde pleade for hym, and whenn it was plaine thatt there were those who thyrstedd for hys bloode; thatt everie yeere as it passedd hadd broughte freshe proofes thatt nowe, alacke, justice there was none for Catholikes; and soe betakinge hym to hys bookes and spyrituall cogitacionnes, hee wolde beseeche us to leave hym to y^e^ onlie taske w^ch^ in hys case was meete and profitabell. Al thatt I dailie hearde, too, chieflie by Trevyllian, who toiledd unceaseing to serve hys frende, onlie gave confyrmacionnes to this opynion of mie so ill usedd husbande. Stil to leave hym thus to perishe I colde not; and y^e^ certaintie, thatt sholde al faile, hee colde bee in no worse

plyghte than hee alreadie was, gave freshe incentive to mie womannishe arte of inventionn. I sawe fm th' firste thatt I colde expect littell or no aidd fm Syr Hubert himselfe, and thatt it were bettere not to appryse hym of mie soteltie til al was reddie. I desyredd and meante thatt none sholde devyse save mieselfe, soe thatt sholde it fayle none othere sholde come to harme; but I founde soone thatt Trevyllian wolde not be lefte oute of anie plotte to serve hys frende: hee oftene saide hee wolde not lyve to witnesse ye murthere of Hubert, and wolde perforce constraine themm who slewe ye one to slaie alsoe ye othere. I riskedd thearfore naughte by seekinge ye aide of Trevyllian, ye peryll whereof was noe more than what hee had determinedd to incur, happene what wolde; beaydes hee wolde be of eminente utilitie,—in truthe, ye more I consideredd ye more I sawe thatt I colde noe waies devyse withoute hym. And as oure plotte wente on, wee tooke counsell of ye soe faithfulle Cuthberte, to whose reddie wytt, activytie, and totalle scorne of hys owne safetie, in hys deere mastere's cawse, wee maynlie owe successe. Al beinge nowe agreede uponn amongste us, wyth difficoltie and moche

entreatie wee obtainedd of Syr Hubert thatt hee wolde fayne sicknesse; whereat I, seemynge moche discomposedd, wente to th' jailere for more rushes to strewe y^e^ chaumber, more coverringe for y^e^ bedde:—th' jailere ofte tymes came to Syr Hubert, moche movedd to compassionn, addynge, as hee mighte, what comfortes y^e^ prisonn affordedd; and, as I foresawe, beinge a mann of abundante speeche, it soone was noysedd abroade of Syr Hubert hys sicknesse.

" Trevyllian meanwhyles solicitedd sondrie gentrie of y^e^ towne, and round aboute, to counsell hym respectinge how he beste colde ayde hys frende; and, awakeninge in theyre brestes a feelinge in behalfe of Syr Hubert, one by one severall at dyverse tymes visittedd hym in y^e^ prisonne, when, darkeninge y^e^ chambere, and hydinge hys face as I mighte by wrappinge hym in furres, in y^e^ wych y^e^ coldnesse of y^e^ seasonne aydedd mee, for thatt a sicke personne needes muste feele y^e^ chillinge aire, y^e^ sadnesse alsoe of Syr Hubertes bearinge helpedd y^e^ deceite, I failinge not to speake wyth bittere lamentacions, for thatt come what wolde, mie husbande hys helthe was faste sinkinge. Thus far had our soteltie proceededd, havinge thus enactedd our

parttes bravelie for two moneths or more when I laste came here, and to your mervayle, fathere, took wyth mee y^e^ brave newe sute, y^e^ wych Syr Hubert havinge never worne, yt colde not be knowne to bee hys. I passe over y^e^ variouse and manie hindraunces wych arose f^m^ Syr Hubert himselfe, who, thinkinge to a certaintie hys case was to bee despayredd of, and loathinge al deceyt, colde scarcelie bee broughte to enacte what hee calledd unworthie mummeries, and to feigne y^e^ sicke mann. Ofte tymes was hee on y^e^ poynt of speakinge y^e^ truthe, when thatt Syr Walter Tremayne, Maister Carewe, Maister Carminowe, and otheres, have playnedd hys infirmitie; naie, once I bethoughte mee Syr Walter lookedd suspectinglie, whereat, fearinge y^e^ discomfiture of mie devyces, soche greefe and perplexitie assayledd mee, thatt y^e^ teares ranne downe mie face for verie sorrowe, y^e^ wych hee perceavinge, spake to mee soothinglie, yet lamentinge wyth soche sinceritie of speeche y^e^ dailye declyninge state of mie husbandes helthe, thatt I founde yt difficolte to hyde y^e^ contentemente y^e^ wych hys wordes impartedd,—and I faynedd y^e^ greefe I hadd felte in verie truthe. Syr Hubert hys riche sute was at firste convey-

edd to Maister Trevyllyan's lodginge, who tooke occasionne to entertayne Syr Walter and ye gentrie who hadd visittedd ye prisonne, and, as to do them honor, arrayedd hiimselfe in thys soe brave attyre. Hee askedd of themm theyre thoughtes of it, and al accordedd in praysinge its costlie broiderie and well orderedd fashionne, knowinge for thatt Trevyllyan is daintie in apparelle, and prone to seeke counselle and opinyons concerninge it, whereas in truthe hee askedd but thatt thei sholde marke it, and for thatt it sholde be graven in theyre myndes. Cuthberte meanwhyles hadd longe beene wynninge over ye minde of ye jailere—hys merrye carrolles, and blythe conceytes, hadd wyledd awaie ye longe wintrie eveninges, tyl Surlie Simon, as thei of ye towne were wont to calle hym, colde not awaie wyth hys nightlie flaggon of ale unlesse Cuthberte were there to singe it in wyth 'And a merrie harte lives longe a.' Thus ye trayne was layde and ye daie at lengthe fixedd for ye execucionne of thatt whereon al dependedd.

"I hadd for some daies wroughte upon Syr Hubert to keepe hys bedd, soe thatt yt seemedd thatt hys sicknesse was greatlie encreasedd.

Old Margery nowe enactedd hyr parte by waylinge over hym, and departinge eache nighte weopinge and tellinge Maude how fearfullie Syr Hubert hys infirmitie crepte on hym; and then yt became of necessitie to instructe hym yn y^e^ parte he hadd to acte—nor can I forgett even to mie lateste houre y^e^ agonye wych assailedd mee, when, findinge thatt of necessitie I muste runne summ riske, and be exposedd mayhappe to reproache and injuriouse speeche, mie deere husbande, regardinge hys own welfayre as naughte, sternlie refusedd what was requiredd of hym, for thatt hee wolde not do what mighte bringe evill to mee tho' ever soe slyghte. Vainlie I prayedd and arguedd y^e^ mattere: vainlie didd Trevyllian, losynge al selfe commaunde, storme and chafe and almoste revyle hys frende, tyl in verie madnesse I sunke on y^e^ grounde shriekinge as yn tormente, y^e^ wych soe affrightedd Syr Hubert, thatt kindlie feelinges wonn fro' hym what colde not y^e^ love of lyffe. Naughte, I saidd, sholde force mee to rise fro' y^e^ erthe whereonn I laie, tyl hee ryghte solemnlie vowedd to do al I enjoynedd, and to y^e^ wych I besoughte hym by y^e^ deere remembrance of eighteeene happie yeeres thatt trewe affeccionn

hadd unitedd us, by ye deere childrene whome hys pertinacitie wolde render orphanns; and as I spake, mie infaunte, leaninge forthe fm olde Margeryes armes, claspedd its lyttel haundes rounde its fatheres necke as tho' yt wolde ayde mie entreatie. Thus was Syr Hubert vanquishedd at laste, and greate was mie contentemente to receayve hys promysse to do al thatt we requiredd. Manie weekes before, Trevyllyan hadd gone to Londone, takinge wyth hym what monies wee hadd savedd, and ye familie jewells, redeeminge alsoe, as hee passedd thro' Exetere, those alreadie pawnedd to ye usurer there. Al theese hee founde meanes to selle advantageouslie, as alsoe ye riche cuppes, saltes, and eweres, ye wych Cuthberte hadd secretlie wythdrawne fm ye liverie cupboarde yn ye halle, whenn thatt hee tooke our younge sonnes by sea to Londone, ye plate beinge in a sacke fulle of apparell yn wych hee enwrappedd yt, and thus consignedd it to a gouldsmithe in Londone, knowne to Maister Spenser. Al theese monies, wyth al of hys owne thatt hee colde put togethere, Trevyllyan committedd into ye haundes of a cityzen of goodlie repute, tradinge to a greate amounte wyth riche merchauntes at Antwerpe, wyther

hee was aboute to proceede, takinge ye monies wyth hym; and in due tyme hee advysedd Trevyllyan thatt hee hadd consignedd al safelie to a howse wel knowne as beinge ye richeste, and notedd for ye fayrest dealinges of anie yn ye Lowe Countrie. Thus have wee thenn, bye Goddes goode providence, of a suretie whereon to lyve, sholde it please hys mercie thatt wee arryve safelie in foraigne partes.

"On ye vii. daie, Trevyllyan attendedd a carousinge whereto hee hadd causedd himselfe to be bidden, ye wych was holdene at a certaine taverne frequentedd by those who have frendes wythin ye prisonne, and at wych, wyth sendrie otheres, were met manie of our frendes who hadd latelie moche visittedd Syr Hubert. Thys taverne standes welle nighe over agenste ye castell, beinge builte neare ye olde gate waie. Trevyllian joinedd ye goodlie companie, attyredd in Syr Hubert hys brave newe sute; to ye cloke whereof hee hadd added more golde lacinges, faininge to have done soe in compliance wyth Syr Walter and Maister Carminowe theyre opynion. Thereto hee calledd theire attentionn, and thei, as welle as otheres of ye gentrie, greatlie praisedd ye fashionninge and broiderie, and thus

causedd hee ye sute to be moche markedd of al. Nathelesse hee faynedd as tho' hee colde scarcelie share in theyre merrimente for verie anxietie respectinge ye increasinge sickenesse of hys frende Syr Hubert; and dinner beinge hardlie endedd, and long'ere ye gentrie meante to disperse, hee rose to goe to ye prisonne; whereto, movedd bye hys talke of hys frendes sadd plighte, sondrie wolde goe wyth hym to ye gate to learne howe Syr Hubert faredd thatt daie. A heavie rheume Trevylian fainedd to have caughte, soe thatt he spake hoarse and lowe, alteringe thus hys voyce, wych naturallie is clear and highe, and as thei wente into ye streete ye winde, of goode lucke, blewe sharpe and colde, ye wych gave hym pretexte to holde hys kerchif to hys face. Thus hee enteredd ye prisonne, leavinge hys frendes in ye jaileres roome, and soone returninge wyth increasedd sadnesse of demeanor saidd hee founde alacke! hys frende in no better plyghte; whereat ye gentrie expressedd concerne and returnedd to ye taverne.

"I nowe calledd up what calmness I colde, and summoninge ye jailere, askedd of hym colde hee permitt me to passe thys nighte yn ye prisonne, for thatt I faine wolde tende Syr Hubert mie-

selfe; thatt I needes muste sende Cuthberte to Trewardrethe for a potionn wych mie husbande hadd beene accustomedd to take, thatt Maister Trevyllian wolde ryde thyther wyth hym, intendinge to go on thence to seeke a skilfulle physicionn, of whom hee hadd hearde, yn a gentlemann hys householde neere Falmouthe, soe thatt hee mighte bringe hym to Syr Hubert; thatt Cuthberte maihappe wolde have to waite a daie or more tyll ye medycine was made reddie, and thatt both hym and Maister Trevyllian beinge absente I colde ill endure to leave Syr Hubert alone. After ponderinge a shorte space, ye jailere grauntedd mie requeste, and hee hadd no sooner lefte us, than Trevyllian orderedd Cuthberte to staie at ye windowe of an outere roome, ye wych gave upon ye outer-gate, and to appryse hym when thatt anie of ye gentrie sholde issue forthe fro' ye taverne opposite. Then I lefte Syr Hubert to rise fro' hys bedd, and, retireinge to ye nexte chambere, betooke mee to earnest praier, and founde mie resolve and courage rise as I commendedd ye affaire to Godd. Anon Syr Hubert calledd mee, and I founde hym equipedd in ye riche sute, ye wych Trevyllian hadd exchangedd for ye page's travel-

linge dresse accustomedd to be worne by Cuthberte, when thatt hee was sente on errauntes; inasmoche as ye heighte of Trevyllian is exacte wyth thatt of Cuthberte, wherfore it was judgedd best thatt hee sholde personifie ye page, besides wych, at ye hostelrie hee wolde have to speake, and bringe forthe ye horses, ye wych Trevyllian wyth moche arte of mimickrie colde do so as to prevente discoverie, ye whyles Syr Hubert wolde not be expectedd to speake, and wee colde not hope thatt hee wolde enacte a page's parte soe eftlie as to avoide suspicionn, besydes thatt hys stature far oustrippedd thatt of Cuthbert. We nowe onlie awaited ye summons, and I was righte gladd thatt ye carousinge lastedd soe longe, for soe ye eveninge was faste closinge, and it was duske ere ye page softlie enteredd ye roome, whisperinge, 'Thei are nowe leavinge ye taverne, depart, and lose not anothere, momente.' As mie deere husbande caughte me in hys armes, I felt for one instaunte thatt I colde not stande, nor thinke, nor move. Mie eies grewe dimme, when Trevyllian whisperedd in mie eare, 'Bethinke you thatt successe dependes on you.' Then al mie strengthe returnedd, and, prayinge hartilie to Godd, I swiftlie

descendedd ye staire, and thoʼ mie voyce and limbes shooke as I spake, feares for Syr Hubert's helthe wolde warrante mie distresse, nor calle forthe mervayle, wherefore ye teares felle faste, as catchinge hym, whom thei thoughte to bee Trevyllian, by ye hande, I conjuredd hym to do al thatt yn hym laie, to preserve to mee a husbande I soe deerlie lovedd; ye whyles ye pretendedd Cuthberte, to diverte ye jailere's eies, snatchedd a frothinge tankarde, thatt a boye was bringinge in, as thoʼ hee wolde drinke, and Simon wyth an angrie othe, chafed for thatt hee wolde have ye firste of ye liquore. Hastilie I rebukedd hym whom I calledd Cuthberte, for ill-tymedd jestinge, admonishinge hym not to delaie on hys erraunde, but to staie yff thatt yt were two daies, tyll ye potionne was dulie preparedd, as all dependedd on its beynge rightlie confectionnedd; and feelinge thatt I colde holde on ye deceyt no longer, I turnedd, and wyth what speede I mighte, regaynedd ye appartmente, where quicklie lockinge ye outere doore, I wente to ye windowe commaundinge ye entraunce, and wyth a beatinge harte, and eies thatt felte as thoʼ thei wolde droppe forthe wyth anxious gazinge, I sawe mie husbande

mufflinge hys face in hys kerchief, and stoopinge as tho' spente wyth coughinge, ye wych disguisedd hys superior heighte, and stoppinge quietlie, as ye gentrie nowe crowdinge fm ye taverne, welle nighe encircledd hym, askinge hym of Syr Hubert; speakinge lowe, soe thatt ye deepe tone of hys voyce seemedd to proceede fm rheum, he, in fewe wordes, recountedd how thatt hys frende's sicknesse causedd hym to seeke one cunninge in physicke, of whom hee wot, and thatt for three, or mayhappe, foure daies, hee myghte be absente on thys missione; when, as hee turnedd to leave themm, Syr Walter, hys mirthe moche increasedd by wyne, calledd to hym for thatt hee wolde have hys companie to ryde forthe oute of ye towne; ye whyles otheres, callinge hym daintie for thatt hee was welle wrappedd yn hys cloke, wolde have pluckedd it fm hym; and two of them lockinge hym by ye armes betwixte them, swore thatt Trevyllian was wont to bee a merrye fellowe, and sholde ayde to atchieve theyre revelrie wyth a throwe at ye dyce at Maister Carewe's howse, near at hande. I felte as if thys momente muste bee mie laste, for everie instaunte me thoughte a discoverie muste ensue; and soe

it wolde have befallene, but for mie husbande hys soe admirabelle presaunce of mynde,—hee fainedd a vehemente fytt of coughinge,—neerlie hadd hys cloke fallen to y^e^ grounde,—but hee gatheredd it rounde hym, and helde y^e^ more hys kerchife to hys face, as, shakinge hys hedde, hee made as tho' hee wolde but colde not speake, to holde himselfe excusedd; then loosedd thei theire holde of hym, as Syr Walter saidd, 'Naie leave hym, see you not how y^e^ rheume tormentes hym.' Nor didd thei seeme willinge to staye theyre mirthe, and lose tyme in compellinge hym to joyne them, when, but as if in noe haste to goe, he slowlie lefte them, urgedd thereto by y^e^ seeminge saucie page, who wyth othes reviled y^e^ sharpe north winde thatt piercedd hym thro' soe bitterlie. Moste of y^e^ gentrie hadd lefte theyre wittes and eie sighte in theyre cuppes; thei lookedd not narrowlie, or, even thro' y^e^ duske, y^e^ statelie bearinge of hym thei spake to seemedd not more like Trevyllian, than dyd hys lowe deepe voyce sounde like y^e^ loude sharpe speeche of hys friende; hardlie didd I breathe tyl I sawe mie deere lovedd husbande turne downe y^e^ hill, and when hee was loste in y^e^ faste gatheringe darkenesse, for y^e^ firste tyme in mie

lyffe didd I blesse Godd for thatt hee was noe longer presente to mie syghte. Meanwhyles, ye merrye troope of frendes, as thei separatedd, talkedd of Syr Hubert hys sicknesse, ye wych thei saidd menacedd to cheate Judge Pophame of a treate hee dearlie lovedd, thatt of condeminge ye recusante Papiste; some speakinge in verie greefe, ye whyles ye greater parte laffedd at ye conceyt, how thatt grimme Dethe sholde foyle ye Judge and be ye firste to seaze ye preye; minglinge theire talke wyth ye burthene of theire drinkinge songes, theyre pittie for Syr Hubert seemedd drownedd in ye fumes of Rhenishe, as thei dispersedd eache on hys waie home. Then didd I returne to ye inner chambere, ye whyles ye firste dawninge of hope seemedd to rise wythin mie harte, for thatt so far Godd in hys mercie hadd prosperedd our endeavoures. I founde olde Margerye busied aboute ye bedd wherein Syr Hubert had laine, and approachinge, sawe extendedd wythin it what I sholde have taken for mie husbande, soe eftlie had shee adjustedd ye furredd cappe and cloke round a stuffedd mawkin coveredd up wyth ye bedde cloathes. And nowe fm ye adjacente roome came in, as it were a duplycayte of old Margerie

herselfe, and hadd not deepe anxietie entirelie possesedd mie minde, I sholde in verie truthe have founde it a pastyme to marke howe Cuthberte, havinge arrayedd himselfe in hys mothere's gear, mimickedd yᵉ olde crone's hobblinge gate, and trypped as hee walkedd, hys feete entanglinge in yᵉ kyrtle. Yt nowe was tyme thatt hee sholde goe, and as hee lefte yᵉ roome al mie feares returnedd, but as I agen lookedd forthe fro' yᵉ windowe, I sawe hym limpinge oute; and hardlie hadd I tyme to shut yᵉ casemente, hearinge foot steppes at yᵉ doore, and Maude askedd for admittaunce. When thatt I hadd lett hyr in, she saidd hyr husbande was so overcome wyth sleepe, thatt hee hadd onlie gone to lock up yᵉ commone fellonnes in yᵉ lower parte of yᵗ Castell, desieringe hyr to locke Syr Hubert hys doore, for thatt hee was too sicke to feare thatt hee sholde get forthe, hee wantedd thearfore not to bee lookedd to, as didd yᵉ wylie knaves in yᵉ prisonne belowe, and thatt shee muste see thatt naughte bee wantedd for yᵉ nighte by Syr Hubert or mieselfe. Speakinge lowe and pointinge to yᵉ bedd, where laie what seemedd to be mie husbande, quietlie slumberinge, I thankedd and dismissedd hyr, hearinge righte gladlie

ye greate keye of ye outer doore turne in ye locke, inasmoche at it gave assurance for thatt as yet naughte was suspectedd. Gentlie agen opinge ye windowe and lookinge as far forthe as ye thicke bars wolde admitt, downe ye hill and in ye towne belowe ye Castell, al seemedd quiett; ye whyles ye lowde chymes of ye greate churche clock tolde sevenn, and wyth joie I bethoughte mee thatt neere an houre hadd passedd synce thatt mie lovedd husbande was gone fro' ye prisonne walls; and fulle fleete I knewe ye faithfulle graie to be, ye wych awaitedd hym at ye hostelrie, and whereon hee wolde, wythin a fewe breefe momentes, have clearedd ye towne, and gainedd ye openn countrie. Nathelesse of exceedinge duration seemedd to mee thys longe nyghte.

"I colde not, for verie disquietude, laie mee downe on ye bedd made for mee in ye inner chaumber, but causinge Margerye to take mie childe and laie wyth it, I passedd til ye clocke strucke twelve, in stryvinge to dispel mie unquiett thoughtes wyth prayere, in devysinge mayhap happie dreames of cominge yeeres, iff thatt al sholde goe welle, or in preparinge mie minde to meete ye worste, if worste muste come.

Stil everie houre, as it passedd, broughte freshe hopes, for everie houre I felte encreasedd yᵉ distaunce 'twixte mie soe lovedd husbande and th' hatedd walles wherin I satt: then rose a storme, wilde and noysie, as tho' hevenn in its wrathe wolde shake yᵉ buildinges where soe ofte hadd beene confynedd yᵉ goode and yᵉ oppressedd; and yᵉ wyndes wilde moaninge awakenedd mye poore babe, who wolde not bee soothedd duringe th' houres thatt yett remainedd of darkenesse, hys piteouse cries addedd to al I alreadie felte—and ryghte gladde was I to see yᵉ lighte of daie. But whenn yᵉ tyme drewe neere whenn thatt yᵉ jailere wolde make hys morninge rounde, I betooke mee wyth yᵉ chylde to yᵉ outer chambere, shuttinge yᵉ doore of thatt wherein Syr Hubert was supposedd to bee. Longe, however, was yt ere Simon appearedd. Yᵉ clocke hadd strucke eighte whenn hee unlockedd yᵉ doore; and, as I wente to meete hym, hee seemedd welle nighe berefte of sense; moche complaynedd hee of drowsinesse and paynes in hys hedd; nor colde hee hardlie understaunde when thatt I tolde hym to bringe Syr Hubert hys meales no farthere thann yᵉ outer doore, for thatt none thatt daie sholde enter yᵉ chambere, as hee

myghte not bee disturbedd. Whiles I spake Simon støredd like one stupifyedd, and ye thoughte crossedd mee thatt doubtlesse Cuthberte hadd contryvedd to drugge ye poore knaves licquore, whereof hee alwaies dranke too freelie; thus aideinge stil more ye greate poynte, thatt tyme sholde bee gainedd ere it sholde bee founde thatt Syr Hubert hadd escapedd. And al ye daie was I enabledd to keepe upp ye deceite; and nyghte beinge returnedd, wyth ye moche consolinge thoughte, thatt nowe by foure and twentie houres Syr Hubert hadd ye starte of hys enemies, I ferventlie thankedd ye Godde of mercie, and soone forgotte mie toyles and disquietts in ye sleepe I soe moche neededd. Duringe two daies more was I enabledd to prolonge ye deceite; but on ye thirde mornynge methoughte Maude dyd ofte tymes proffer hyr servyces, wyth more of pertinacitie thann beseemedd hyr, askinge for thatt I sholde let hyr, as shee was wont, enter Syr Hubert hys chaumber, to order and clean it; thinkynge mee alone wyth hym, it muste needes have seemedd straunge for thatt I sholde chuse to doe soche menialle toile mieselfe; nor colde Syr Hubert hys slumberes holde hym soe longe. At laste

came y^e^ jailere hymselfe, and stoutlie askedd of mee whearfore Cuthberte was not yett returnedd, nor yett thys soe skilfulle physician, for whome Maister Trevyllian hadd riddene in soche haste, thatt it was nowe soche sylence in y^e^ chaumbere more like y^e^ silence of dethe than sicknesse, and thatt it behovedd hym to see hys prisonere for whose state hee was to answer; and as hee spake hee wolde have enteredd. Angrilie I forbade hym, but in vayne. I then besoughte hym, and methinkes I myghte thus have gainedd anothere daie, when mie deere lucklesse babe, who sufferedd moche f^m^ y^e^ colde prisonn dampe, gan to waile sorelie and loudlie: thinkinge onlie to soothe y^e^ poore bantlinges cries, olde Margerye, forgettinge thatt shee hadd beene seene, as it was thoghte, to leave y^e^ prisonn, was hearde to coaxe y^e^ chylde, whereat saidd Symon, 'Smalle mervaille, Madam, is it thatt y^e^ wyll not thatt I enter there, for by'r Ladie, you seeme to have goodlie companie; nathelesse, as none maie enter these faire walles unknowne to mee, blame mee not if thatt I see whoe thus has added to mie guestes.' 'Naie, Simon, tis but y^e^ olde crone Margerye.' 'Never knewe I yet,' saidd hee, 'an olde crone thatt

colde flie in at a gratedd wyndowe, and by no othere means colde shee have enteredd here; for, by Saynt Michael of ye Mounte, shee wente forthe on ye eveninge of Mondaie laste; by ye same tokenne thatt shee pushedd mee somewhat lustylie as shee passedd mee wythin ye doore waie, nor wolde shee evene saie soe moche as a 'God ye goode evene' to mee as shee lympedd oute.' Sainge thys, hee perforce enteredd ye chambere, and ye sighte of hym so utterlie bereft ye auntiante gossippe of al reasonn or discretionn, thatt, utteringe a lowde crie, shee rann to ye bedde, hastilie coveringe ye mawkin, wych mighte perchaunce have stil seemedd to bee Syr Hubert, hadd not Simon thus been ledde to looke thereat. Followinge, then, and catchinge ye affrightedd beldame wyth one haunde, and callinge forthe, 'Holloa, mie mistresse, whatt hide ye there,' wyth ye othere pluckedd hee ye bedd coveringes soe rudelie, thatt ye furredd cappe and doublett felle to ye grounde. Fear, then, and choler distortedd hys visage, til it was frightfulle to beholde; and, totallie forgettinge ye respect hee hitherto hadd shewedd mee, a torrente of opprobrious speeche burste forthe, ye wych I wolde not staie to heere, but,

takeinge y^e^ arme of y^e^ poore tremblinge olde nurse, wyth mie chylde claspedd yn mie othere arme, I retyredd to y^e^ innermoste chaumbere, wych havinge a bolte wythin, I drewe it, and resolvedd there to awayte mie fate. Longe hearde I rage y^e^ storme of Simon hys choler, til, havinge spente its furie, hee desyredd me to ope y^e^ doore, y^e^ wych ryghte stoutlie I refusedd: hee then menacedd mee, for thatt hee wolde keepe mee in y^e^ prisonn. 'Thatt,' saidd I, 'ye dare not doe: I am not y^r^ prisonner, make mee soche at y^r^ perille.' 'Ye shall bee soe til ye declaire whither y'r husbande is gone,' saidd hee, 'and howe gott hee forthe.' To y^e^ wych I makinge no answere, hee, after manie fruitlesse attemptes, saidd hee wolde goe and rayse y^e^ towne, thatt of a suretie y^e^ false recreante knave wolde soone bee founde; and f^m^ y^e^ Scheriffe himselfe I sholde heare whatt befallethe those who seeke to compasse y^e^ flighte of traitoures—and thus wente hee forthe. I thenn turnedd al mie endeavoures to calme y^e^ greefe and selfe accusinges of poore olde Margerye, who calledd herselfe y^e^ cause whearfore Syr Hubert sholde bee pursuedd and takenn. But yn al truthe I spake in sayinge shee onlie broughte on a dis-

overie a fewe houres y^e^ soonere; thatt it was manifeste suspicionn hadd beene awakenedd, and thatt it was not likelie thatt Simon wolde have let moche longer tyme passe ere hee hadd seene were hys misgivinges trewe or false; thatt nowe soe longe a tyme hadd surelie putt Syr Hubert far beyonde y^e^ reache of anie hys pursuers, who wolde not eithere knowe where to searche for hym, and thatt in fulle sinceritie I felte myeselfe in noe waies disquiettedd. These wordes, and y^e^ calme demeanore I putt on, restoredd quiett to y^e^ faithfulle harte of y^e^ soe attachedd olde crone. And thenn summonedd I what courage I colde, for thatt I sawe righte soone sholde have I to meet y^e^ questionninge, mayhap th' threttes and uncourteouse speeche, of y^e^ Scheriffe, whose bearinge had constantlie beene harshe and unbeseeminge; nor had I longe to waite ere I hearde loude voyces and trampe of feete up y^e^ stayre, and along y^e^ roomes, and wyth no gentle haunde one knockedd and askedd to enter, saiynge hee was y^e^ Scheriffe. To one of hys degree, I saidde, I of a suretie wolde come forthe, wel assuredd to receave at hys haundes treatemente befittinge mie conditionn; and, as I oped y^e^ doore, like

one dementit, rudelie seazinge mie hand, hee cryedd oute, wyth othes—'Whatt have ye done? By ye holie roode, ye shall repente it.' Instantlie withdrawinge fm ye unmannerlie graspe, and seatinge mieselfe on ye onlie chayre ye roome contaynedd, none else were there save benches, commandinge mie voyce, so thatt it seemedd not to shake, altho' mie harte was beatinge as tho' it wolde burste, I answeredd, 'What have I done? mie dewtie; nor doe I see thatt it is thearfore youres to insulte mee.' Rage almoste chokedd hys speeche, but wyll I not recounte what passedd, inasmoche as forgettinge to whom he spake, I knowe not to what extreame hys violence myghte have gone; and tho' I remainedd seatedd, not answeringe, or seeminge as tho' I regardedd hys opprobriouse wordes, stil felt I stunge, and hardlie able to endure, when Syr Walter Tremaine, and othere gentrie, havinge hearde whatt hadd passedd, hastilie enteredd; and instantlie was I certayne of protectionn, and to meete at theyre haundes treatemente befyttinge. As thei advancedd up ye roome, enoughe hearde thei, to learne what was ye Scheriffe hys insultinge demeanor. In a momente then thei encercledd hym, wyth grave

expostulacionnes thatt hee wolde desiste; ye whiles Syr Walter respectfullie addressinge mee, offeredd mee hys haunde to leade mee forthe; reproachinge ye Scheriffe for thatt hee hadd not at ye firste conductedd mee himselfe; desieringe mye poore olde Margerye to keepe close to mee wyth ye chylde. I thankedd Syr Walter, for thatt hee was a proofe thatt al courteseye and knightlie bearynge had not entirelie ceasedd, thatt wyth one who thus demeanedd hymselfe I felte protectedd from ye insultes of those who forgott what was due to gentel byrthe, and to the wyffe of one superiore to them in ranke, as in minde and reputacionn: whereat, lookinge moche confusedd, ye Scheriffe approachedd to holde himselfe excusedd; but, turninge fromm hym and heedinge hym not, I lefte ye prisonn, Maister Carewe followinge in al haste, to offer mee ye use of hys howse; and caringe not to go to ye hostelerie, I ryghte gratefullie acceptedd hys profferredd courtesie. Hys wyffe receavedd mee wyth moche goode wille, and albeit I wishedd to returne to mine owne howse, mie poore chylde and Margerye seemedd soe moche to wante reste, and as a stormie nighte was cominge on, a warme bedde, methoughte, wolde be

more meete for them than to ryde thro' y^e^ beatinge rayne; I thearuponn agreede to hyr soe hospitabell proffer.

"Mean whiles Syr Walter and Maister Carewe hadd been calledd forthe, and now returnedd to saie y^e^ Scheriffe hadd followedd them. Carewe wolde noe waies let hym enter y^e^ howse, but hee ryghte stoutlie swore thatt I sholde not returne to Trewardrethe, unlesse hee, as well as sondrie in hys emploie as searchers, wente alsoe, for thatt thei thoughte mayhap Syr Hubert wolde bee founde there. Whereuponn I advysedd wyth Syr Walter and Carewe iff thatt I sholde resiste th' searche of y^e^ howse; thys by noe meanes thei councelledd mee to doe, inasmoche as it wolde but augmente th' Scheriffe hys lacke of courtesie, and in y^e^ presente state of affayres hee hadd a righte to enforce hys will. Nathelesse thei bothe besoughte mee, for thatt thei sholde goe wyth mee, y^e^ w^ch^ I was righte gladde to graunte. Syr Walter saiynge, 'Of a suretie, Madame, feare ye no searche—witt and reddie invencionn, soche as youres, will in noe waies have endedd onlie in procuringe Syr Hubert sheltere wythin hys owne dwellynge, whithere th' firste searche wolde na-

turalie bee made.' Noe waies able to divyne were thys saidd to entrappe mee, I saidd onlie thatt nexte morninge I sholde bee in reddinesse to availe mieselfe of theire soe kyndlie proferredd escorte; and, wyth maniefolde thankes for thys and othere theire friendlie dealinges towardes mee, I withdrewe, and a calme sleepe restoredd y^e^ somewhat enfeebledd strengthe of mie mynde and bodie. When I was to departe thys morninge, Maister Carewe wolde have mee conveiedd in hys ladies owne lyttere, hys lacqueys attendinge, and himselfe and Syr Walter on horsebacke at eache side. As wee lefte y^e^ towne, th' Scheriffe and hys poursuivauntes followedd in al haste, but wolde not Syr Walter or Carewe permitt hym to addresse mee. When thatt we came to y^e^ gate-howse, some feeres came overe mee, leste Cuthberte sholde not have warnedd ye, Fathere, to keepe close concealedd, and, as I enteredd y^e^ greate doore, th' Scheriffe rudelie saidd, 'None leave thys halle til y^e^ howse has beene searchedd.' And, whiles some of th' searchers wente to guarde y^e^ servauntes, soe thatt none sholde escape, otheres stoode at the severalle doores; butt at thys Syr Waltere chaffed, for thatt soche uncourteouse

demeanoure sholde not bee sufferedd; and ye whiles Carewe ledd mee by th' haunde, Syr Walterre pushinge ye menn fro' ye doore, we enteredd ye smal withdrawinge chambere off th' halle, and there remainedd thei wyth mee ye whiles ye searche proceededd. I constrainedd myselfe to holde a cheerfulle converse wyth themm: and longe didd ye searchers, as ye muste have hearde. Fathere, traverse ye howse in everie directionn. Att ye laste, wee hearde th' Scheriffe chafynge in ye halle, for thatt naughte hadd come to lighte, and hys choler risinge, loudlie ratedd hee hys poursuivauntes, for thatt ye stupid knaves had founde no one: then retortedd thei, for thatt hee hadd broughte them where noughte colde be founde, and moche brawlinge ensuedd: but at ye laste thei wente farthe, and scone ryghte gladlie hearde wee theyre horses leave ye cowrte. Then wyth moche discretionn mie soe generouse protectores rose to leave mee, seeinge thei colde noe further serve mee, wyth manie protestacionnes of theire desier to be usefulle to mee, and thatt sholde I fynde myselfe in anie straites agen, needes wolde I appryse themm of it; to ye wych I scarcelie colde replie, for thatt mie tongue colde no waies

telle themm how deeplie in mie harte I felte theyre kyndnesse; and, waitynge onlie til thei were fayrlie departedd, I came to seeke ye, Fathere, and recounte to ye ye soe happie resulte of mie undertakinges."

Then askedd I of mie ladie wolde shee confyde to mee where Syr Hubert hadd betakenn himselfe, and what desygnedd thei to doe? "Of a suretie, Fathere," saidd shee; "yet must I firste assure myselfe thatt noughte is hearde." Nathelesse, on oping ye doore, wee found Gervase faithefulle to hys charge, walkynge to and fro on ye hedde of ye stayre. Againe, thearfore, commaundynge hym to see thatt none approachedd th' doore, wee returnedd to ye withdrawinge roome, and mie ladie continuedd in a low voyce what ys here followynge:—

"When at ye firste I resolvedd to attempte mie husbande hys escape, I deemedd it of a necessitie thatt sholde hee get forthe ye prisonn hee muste forthwythe leave ye countrie, and whenn I advisedd on ye mattere wyth Trevyllian hee also judgedd likewyse, it beinge as a thinge impossybell thatt hee sholde remayne hidden, tho' but for even a fewe daies. Yn consequence whearof I got togethere al ye monies and plate,

and, as I tolde ye, dispatchedd al to Antwerpe, by meanes of Cuthbert, whom wee then tooke into councelle, so to procure some sailynge vesselle to be in reddinesse when thatt y^e^ tyme sholde drawe neere. But in thys hee founde moche difficoltie, inasmoche as y^e^ Governore at Plymouthe, as likewyse hee who commaundedd y^e^ Castell of Pendennis, havinge been reproachedd, for thatt sondrie hadd takene shippe, bothe at Plymouthe and Falmouthe, escapeinge thus beyonde seas from y^e^ penalties dew to y^e^ breache of y^e^ lawes, thei hadd causedd strycte surveie to bee made of al who enteredd or lefte those portes, soe thatt none of those ownynge tradinge vessells colde bee broughte to take passengeres; and thys Cuthberte learnedd for a certayntie, goeinge to hys aunte at Falmouthe, who causedd hyr sonn to seeke there and at Plymouthe, yet colde hee fynde none wyllinge. Then Cuthberte bethoghte hym of turninge to accounte whatt befelle hym whenn thatt hee wente wyth mie younge sonnes to Dunkirke. One of thatt towne, who hadd sailedd in y^e^ same shippe wyth them fro' Londonn, as hee steppedd into y^e^ boate to launde, felle into y^e^ sea, and y^e^ tide runninge out faste, hee was presantlie carryedd under y^e^ vessell,

and wolde have drownedd hadd not Cuthberte jumpedd in after hym, and beyng stronge, and swimmynge passynge welle, but not withoute moche stryvinge, caughte hym, and broughte hym safe to launde. Whenn thatt hee recoveredd himselfe, to shewe hys gratytude, hee perforce wolde carrie, not onlie Cuthberte, but th' younge boyes and Maister Spencer, to hys faire howse in ye towne, hee beinge a trader of some wealthe; and tyl thei founde occasionne to journeie on to Saynt Omers, hee was fulle fayne to entertaine themm: duringe whych tyme Maister Spencer recountedd to hym soe moche of ye persecucionnes practysedd nowe in Englaunde agenste ye Catholikes, thatt hee professedd hymselfe as moche earneste in theyre cawse, and speciallie hearynge thatt ye fathere of th' boyes, who hadd moche engagedd hys likeynge, was alsoe in prisonne on matteres touchynge hys faithe. When Cuthberte, thearfore, was aboute to returne to Englaunde—ye gratefulle mann findynge thatt in noe waies colde hee be prevailedd on to accepte evene ye leaste presente as a testimonie of thankes—conjuredd hym to appryse hym iff thatt hee ever colde in anie waies serve hym. Goinge thenn to Plymouthe,

and takeinge shippe there for London, Cuthberte easilie founde meanes thence to saile to Dunkirke, where hee soughte hys frende th' tradere; who, trewe to hys worde, not onlie wolde thatt a shippe of hys sholde lye off Plymouthe, waytinge to take up Syr Hubert, but wolde hymselfe saile thereinn, forasmoche as hee caredd not to truste anie but himselfe in an enterprise where thear myghte bee sum perill. Cuthberte, thearfore, returnedd to Launcestone, to gladden us wyth y^e^ joiefulle tydinges thatt in anothere moneth y^e^ Dutche vessell wolde bee layinge off Plymouthe, and as neere into porte as myghte bee withoute creatinge misgyvinges. Trevyllian thenn goynge to a small fyshinge towne on y^e^ coaste, boughte hym a lighte crafte, usedd thear by y^e^ fyshers in theire trade, either up y^e^ riveres or oute at sea; and havinge a laccqueye fulle trusteworthie, to hym hee confidedd thys parte of y^e^ plotte: causinge hym to donn a fisheres dresse, and wyth nettes and lines to goe in thys boate up y^e^ Tamar, where al who sawe thoughte hee was plying hys trade. When thatt Syr Hubert, then, if thatt it pleasedd God, wolde have escapedd fro' y^e^ prisonne in y^e^ dresse worne by Trevyllian, who was to followe hym

as Cuthberte, thei wolde bee to goe to y^e^ hostelrie, where, a fewe daies before, y^e^ page wolde have conveyedd Syr Hubert hys two fleetest horses, whych mountinge, thei wolde ryde wyth al speede to a certaine poynt on y^e^ ryvere, whithere y^e^ fyshinge boate was to meete themm. Cuthberte, goinge by nighte acrosse y^e^ fieldes to Trewardrethe, wolde ryde from thence to Maister Edgecombes, at Cotele Castell, where Syr Hubert and Trevyllian hopedd to get before y^e^ breake of daie, and attyre themm, as welle as Cuthberte, in y^e^ gear of sayleres; y^e^ whych Trevyllian hadd devysedd wyth an olde servaunt of hys familie, y^e^ whom, in Maister Edgecombe hys absence, hadd custodie of y^e^ Castell: thence in y^e^ same boate wolde al three proceede thro' y^e^ porte of Plymouthe, as iff to fyshe in opene sea, and thus gayne y^e^ Dutche vesselle,—y^e^ whych, not manie daies before y^e^ enterprise, Cuthbert hadd soughte in a fisheinge boate, and findinge as appointedd, hadd boardedd and apprysedd y^e^ tradere of y^e^ daie whereon hee myghte looke for Syr Hubert and hys frende. Al thys, I truste in Godde, has been atchievedd wyth successe. Syr Hubert hadd so longe th' starte of hys enemies, thatt, even hadd thei

known whithere to persewe hym, I thinke thei wolde not have beene enabledd to catche hym; besydes, it was evidaunte for thatt thei knewe not where to searche, and were takene quite as it were by surpryse. As wee lefte Launcestone thys morninge, Syr Walter saidd that ye Scheriffe and hys menn hadd passedd al nighte raisinge ye towne, and pryinge into eache and everie howse and buildinge. Moche hope have I, then, thatt mie soe belovedd husbande is in safetie, and thatt ere longe I shal bee enabledd to followe hym. Til Cuthberte returnes, greate anxietie of mynde I needes muste feele; but ye Godde who has til nowe supportedd mee, wil of a suretie continue hys mercies, soe longe as I alsoe contynue to looke to hym alone for aidd."

I lefte noughte unsaidd, ye more to implante in ye soe piouse mynde of mie ladie soche profitabell cogitacionnes, and soe well fytted to helpe hyr to endure whatt maie yett falle to hyr lott.

Thys xxv daie.—Heavilie has passedd ye tyme synce thatt mie ladie returnedd, inasmoche as eache daie has commencedd wyth a newe borne

hope thatt some tydinges wolde arryve of Syr Hubert, and eache nighte has seene ye morninges expectacionn blyghtedd. To add to hyr dystresse, hyr younge chylde, who sufferedd moche by manie daies entire confinemente in ye dampe of ye prisonne, is sicke, and thys morne hadd ye maladie greatlie increasedd.

Thys xxx daie.—I have passedd in stryvinge to console mie poore ladie, even as Rachael weepinge for hyr offspringe. Ye chylde was yester nighte removedd to a farre better worlde, and moche, but as yet vainlie, do I endeavoure to imprinte on mie ladies minde ye moste consolinge thought, thatt, releasedd fm paine and trobell, yt nowe rejoices in ye sighte of Godd, and moreover, thatt it is for hyr and ytts fathere an erneste intercessor wyth ye Almightie. Chieflie does ye sorrowinge ladie harpe upon ye greefe it wyl cawse to Syr Hubert, who ofte tymes durynge hys prisonne trobells founde sweete solace in ye endearmentes of hys childe, naminge it hys littel comforte, and for thatt shee was, shee saies, answerable to restore it well and yn safetie to itts soe lovinge fathere. Albeit, I truste ye holie exercyses of thys weeke ensuinge,

and cogitacionnes on y^e^ dethe and passion of our blessedd Lorde, will wythdrawe y^e^ poore ladie's thoughtes f^m^ y^e^ sorrowe, wych, albeit it is naturall, must not be yieldedd to, nor wyll hyr stronge minde reste longe, methinkes, ere it stryves to shake off thys loade of woe.

Thys vii daie of Apryll.—Wee have managedd soe as to celebrate as beste wee mighte y^e^ solemnitie of Eastere; nathelesse we were somewhat straitnedd for roome, inasmoche as we daredd not to raise an altare else where save in y^e^ celle wythin y^e^ gallerie walle; and for thatt y^e^ poore peasauntrie faine wolde attende y^e^ holie mysteries, moche difficoltie founde wee in orderinge matteres soe thatt naught sholde bee discoveredd; y^e^ women mie ladie causedd to come at diverse tymes, and lodginge them wythin y^e^ howse, shee wolde not thatt thei departedd tyll Holie Weeke and Eastere were overpaste; y^e^ menn, workinge theire dailie toyle in y^e^ surroundinge fieldes, colde enter in and leave y^e^ house wythout suspicionn; and thus didd y^e^ good ladies charitie obtayne for these poore souls y^e^ benefitt of religiouse aide at thys soe holie tyme, and in y^e^ actyve orderinge of these affayres

founde shee reliefe in hyr sorrowe; nor was hyr pityfulnesse of y^e^ wantes of otheres sufferedd to passe wythout recompense. I hadd not longe finishedd thys morninge offeringe up y^e^ holie Masse, when, as I am wonte, I pacedd y^e^ gallerie, and lookinge on y^e^ pleasaunce, sawe y^e^ poore countrie folke passinge thro' it in numbers of three and four at a tyme, soe to departe unmarkedd thro' y^e^ posterne doore into y^e^ parke, when I espyedd an agedd womann hobblinge towardes y^e^ doore as tho' shee wolde enter yt; callinge Gervase, I sente hym to aske whearfore she soughte y^e^ howse, bethinkinge mee it was one of mie flocke thatt colde not come so farre tyl then. I mervailedd as I sawe Gervase laffe when thatt hee spake to y^e^ olde beldame, who, swiftlie enteringe, crossedd y^e^ pleasaunce yn three boundes, throwinge hyr coif in y^e^ ayre, and shoutinge like one dementit. Not longe was I lefte to wondermente, for in a momente y^e^ gallerie doore burste openn, and y^e^ seeminglie dafte olde crone ranne in wyth y^e^ speede of youth, and kneelinge to me saidd, "Fathere, y^r^ benisonn; but give it in al haste, for I muste see mie ladie." At hearinge y^e^ voyce of Cuthberte, for it indeed was hee, I felte ere hee

answeredd mee thatt al was welle; but as I saidd, "Syr Hubert then is safe?" mie ladie enteredd in al speede, and felle on hyr knees in speechless thankfulness att hearinge hym make answare, "Yea safe—al safe at ye laste. Nathelesse harde toyle hadd wee to compasse it. Syr Hubert albeit is at Saynt Omeres, and welle, and wolde bee bettere hadd hee mie ladie wyth hym; and al are welle, mie younge maisteres blythe and gamesome as ever, and growinge faste; naie, colde I scarcelie knowe Maister Gilbert, whom wee founde neerlie tall as mie maister." "Mie childrene too in helthe! Greate Godd bee praisedd!" saidd ye ladie, after a tyme essayinge to speake, hyr eies overflowinge wyth teares. "Goode Cuthberte, howe can ye gratefulnesse I owe ye ever bee repayedd." Whereat, and at ye sighte of hys belovedd ladie, ye poore youthe was soe moche movedd thatt hee wepte alsoe, and for a while colde none speake agen a worde, tyl, dashinge awaie ye teares, "Beshrewe mee," saidd ye page, "mie honoredd mothere, antient Margerie, colde not crie in better fashionne; shame on mee! when thatt I came to joie mie ladies harte wyth soche gladde tidinges." "Naie, Cuthberte," saidd shee, "al

teares are not of sorrowe; but nowe go pay thy dutie to y^r^ old mothere, who, poore soule, has hadd freshe cause for sorrowinge, and other greefes besyde y^e^ perylls of Syr Hubert and hyr sonne, for sorelie has poore Margerie sharedd wyth mee y^e^ grievinge for hyr soe lovedd nurselinges dethe." But for thatt I wolde not soe sadde a subjecte nowe sholde crosse y^e^ ladies minde, I dismissedd Cuthberte to get hym refreshmente, and to chaunge hys disguisinge for hys pages dresse; and charginge hym then to returne and recounte al thatt hadd passedd to hys ladie, I discoursedd wyth hyr on Syr Hubertes safetie, till her eies, soe dimmedd by greefe and dailie weepinge, shone once more wyth joie, and shee seemedd as tho' al memorie of paste mischaunces were done awaie.

Thys viij daie.—Exceedinge greate, in verie truthe, have beene Syr Hubert hys perills, and tyll late yester evenne didd mie ladie passe wyth mee in listinge to Cuthbert hys recitall. After thatt hee hadd got out of y^e^ prisonne, and across y^e^ fieldes to Margeries cott, and causedd soche mervaile to hys brothere by hys womannes gear, and thatt hee hadd, as yt were a spryte,

appearedd to mee in y^e^ gallerie, and in al haste sped awaie fro' Trewardrethe, Cuthberte tolde howe thatt hee in shorte space hadd gainedd y^e^ riveres banke, and to a lone spot, whithere some daies before hee hadd draggedd an olde boate, usedd some tyme by Syr Hubert to crosse y^e^ rivere when thatt hys hawke pursuedd y^e^ quarrie beyonde y^e^ streame, and there hee lefte y^e^ faithfulle steede, who, soone findinge hys waie backe, was founde nexte morninge at y^e^ gate-howse. Meanwhiles Cuthberte founde meanes to guide hys somewhat crazy vesselle downe y^e^ streame, and was righte gladde, as y^e^ olde porter oped y^e^ private doore f^m^ y^e^ banke into a vaulte thatt ledd into Cotele Castell, to heare thatt hys soe lovedd maister, wyth Maister Trevyllian, were safe and soundlie sleepinge after theire hurriedd and wearysome ryde. Nathelesse somewhat greevedd was hee to finde thatt Syr Hubert hadd fallen as hee leapedd fro' y^e^ boate, and hadd soe moche hurte hys legge thatt when hee strove to rise hee colde nott; thys addinge moche to y^e^ disquiett of hys minde, fever ensuedd, and duringe iij daies hys sicknesse constrainedd hym to keep hys bedd. He was then resolvedd no more to delaie; but nowe

it beinge eveninge, a tramplinge of horses hearde thei wythoute y^e^ gates, and presentlie y^e^ olde porter ranne in affrightedd, for thatt hys maister and sondrie gentrie were arrivinge. Syr Hubert, Maister Trevyllian, and Cuthberte, followedd hym to a smal chambere wythin hys owne howse at y^e^ gate, whear lockinge them in, hee wente in al speede to admitt Syr Richarde. After some space hee returnedd wyth sorrowfull exclamacionn, for thatt hee was utterlie undone sholde it be knowne thatt Syr Hubert laie concealedd thear, for thatt Syr Richarde beinge, as hee saidd, moste earneste to prove hys stedfaste zeal in y^e^ cawse of y^e^ newe doctrynes, hadd of late moche lent himselfe to y^e^ enforcemente of y^e^ lawes agenste Papistrie, for thatt hee hadd ofte tymes beene accusedd of favoringe them. Maister Trevanyon y^e^ Scheriffe, thearfore, after y^e^ fruitlesse searche thro' Launcestone, hadd summonedd sondrie of y^e^ gentrie to assiste in, as it were, a hunte over y^e^ countrie for Syr Hubert, wherein Syr Richarde was aidynge wyth al hys mighte; and y^e^ porter hadd hearde how thatt in some sorte suspicionne was abrode thatt Syr Hubert laie concealedd neere upon y^e^ rivere, so as to crosse fro' anie porte whereat

hee mighte embarke, and thatt betymes nexte daie Syr Richarde, wyth ye Scheriffe and others, wolde sayle to Plymouthe, thear to make diligente searche soe thatt no vesselle mighte departe thence. Naughte then remainedd but for Syr Hubert to get awaie forthwyth; and as ye maister of ye castell and hys frendes were then at supper, ye porter causinge them silentlie to followe hym, let themm forthe at ye smal posterne on ye riveres brinke, and councelledd themm quicklie to set sayle, but theire smal boate, ye wych hadd beene lefte neere ye posterne, hadd filledd wyth water; thei essayedd nathelesse to guide it alonge ye currente, but it colde scarcelie floate; a stormie wynde blewe righte agenste theire course, and heavie raine came on, soe thatt thei of necessitie betooke them to ye sheltere of an highe rocke thatt overhunge ye streame. Here, as thei baledd ye watere fm ye boate, Trevyllian, likeinge not ye beatinge of ye raine, jumpedd on ye rocke to seeke a coverte, when hee founde rude steppes cutt in ye stones, and soone returnedd to tell thatt at ye top was a lonesome buildinge, wherein thei mighte abide til ye tempeste was o'er past. Firmlie, then, attachinge their boate, thei climb-

edd y^e^ stayre and enteredd an archedd doore waie: strikeinge then a lighte, by y^e^ flickeringe gleames of a small lanthorne, thei sawe thatt thei were in a ruinedd chapell, and Syr Hubert recountedd how thatt, as a striplinge, hadd hys fathere broughte hym thithere, tellinge hym of y^e^ cawse whearfore yt hadd beene buildedd on thatt spot, and how thatt hys grandsire wyth hys frende and kinesmann Syr Richarde Edgecombe hadd assistedd at y^e^ consecracionn thearof, beinge thatt Syr Gilberte Tracie had sharedd Syr Richard hys perylls when thatt hee soughte to joine y^e^ troopes thatt flockedd to Richmonde hys standarde. Suspicionn was abrode, Edgecombe and Traceye were persuedd, and not adventuringe to enter Syr Richarde hys castell, thei laie hiddenn in y^e^ deepe woodes on y^e^ riveres banke. But, neerlie hemmed in, Syr Richard tooke hys cappe, and puttinge a stone therein, he flunge it downe y^e^ rocke into y^e^ streame, y^e^ wych hys pursuers hearinge, thei no waies doubtedd thatt Syr Rich^d^ hadd for verie dispaire leapedd in and drownedd hym, so thei gave over y^e^ searche, and y^e^ youths escapedd into Brittainy, whence thei returnedd for y^e^ fighte of Bosworthe, where gained thei thear

spurres and knightehoode. Ye frendes shortlie after weddedd two sisteres, ye fayre Mistresses Joane and Isabel Durneforde, and tyes of bloode but strengthenedd theire frendshipp; riches and honores flowedd in faste uponn them, and Syr Richard was made comptrollere to ye householde of Kinge Henrie, who was ever mindfulle of ye earlie zeale in hys supporte, wherebye Syr Richardes lyffe was perilledd; and in gratefulle remembraunce of Godde hys protectionn, ye knighte builte and endowedd thys chapell, ye dedicacionn whereof was a goodlie syghte to al, but to none more than to Syr Gilbert Tracie, who gave sondrie fayre coveringes for ye altare, clothe of golde and silvere, overlaide wyth riche broiderie worke;—and yearlie wolde ye knightes holde thear a solemm festivall on ye daie whereonn thei hadd scapedd theyre pursuers. In after tyme Syr Richard, returninge fm a missionn whereon Kinge Henrie hadd sent hym to ye Frenche Kinge, dyedd at Morlays in Brittaine, and was thear buryedd, hys widowe and Syr Gilberte erectinge ye fayre cenotaphe to hys memorie in thys hys chapell; ye wych Syr Hubert viewedd wyth bittere lamentacionnes, for thatt ye sonne of hys grandsires frende sholde

have forsaken y^e^ faithe of hys forefathers, and lefte y^e^ chapell to ruine and desolacion, and y^e^ goodlye monumente to be defacedd and spoyledd, for alreadie parte of y^e^ roofe hadd fallen yn, and brokenn y^e^ mouldinges of y^e^ canopie. Then knelte thei downe and repeatedd wyth Syr Hubert y^e^ *De Profundis* for y^e^ soule of Syr Richard, and y^e^ storme abatinge, thei returnedd to y^e^ boate, and gettinge into y^e^ currente, duringe a space thei were carryedd on, even untyl righte gladlie sawe thei thatt y^e^ porte was neare. Morninge now began to breake, when, hearinge a splashinge of oares advancinge behind them, thei lookinge sawe a gallant vesselle bearinge downe y^e^ streame, and by y^e^ yett imperfect lighte thei nathelesse colde discerne y^e^ pennonne at y^e^ sterne was thatt of Syr Richard Edgecombe. Hastilie turnedd thei theire smal boate towardes y^e^ banke, and throwinge forthe a nett, faynedd as thei were fishinge; and y^e^ whiles, Syr Rich^d^ and Maister Trevanyon, whome thei sawe in th' vesselle, passedd bye, Cuthbert, in righte goode Cornishe tongue, railedd at theire ill lucke, for thatt naughte colde thei catche. No waies doubtinge nowe thatt thei were pursuedd, yt was agreede that thei

sholde not, as thei fayne wolde have done, seeke for a larger vesselle wherein thei mighte more safelie gaine ye Dutche shippe, but adventure forthe thro' ye porte into ye open sea, in ye smal fishinge boate. Proceedinge therfore, thei soone nearedd ye towne and passed on, somewhat nathelesse discomfitted to finde, for thatt ye winde blew stronge and ye waves were highe, sondrie smal crafte were cominge into porte, and approaching themm, expressed mervaile for thatt thei sholde adventure forthe, jeeringe themm for thatt thei colde thinke to catche fishe and a storme menacinge. Beinge but littel skilledd in ye marineres arte, theire peryll was therebye also moche increasedd, but commendinge them to Godd, thei went onwardes, seeinge, to theire unspeakabell comforte, ye Dutche tradere at anchor but a fewe bowe shottes distaunte, when, as thei bethoughte themm thei were nearlie in safetie, a hugeouslie rollinge wave upsette ye soe fraille vesselle. Maister Trevyllyan and Cuthberte beinge rare swimmers, soone regainedd ye boate, ye wych floatedd keele upwardes, whereon thei climbedd—but wel nighe dementit were thei to fynde thatt Syr Hubert colde no where bee seene. In desperacionn both plungedd agen into

ye sea, swymminge at hazarde, wyth difficoltie buffettinge ye waves, and Cuthberte gave al up for loste, when, clynginge to an oare of ye boate, and neerlie spente, hee descriedd hys maister, whom hee seizedd, as hee saidd, in moste unmannerlie fashionn by ye collar, and dragginge hym alonge wyth Trevyllian, made shifte to regaine ye floatinge keele, whereto, wyth hys leatherne belte, hee firmlie attachedd hym, and, clymbinge to ye topp, wavedd highe hys kerchif, hopynge to bee seene by ye Dutchemann—and, by goode happe, ye signalle was espiedd. Soone hadd hee ye joie to see a boate loweredd and advaunce towardes themm; wyth moche difficoltie it nearedd themm, even as a huge and furiouse wave, breakynge over ye keele, tore it in sunder. Cuthberte nathelesse helde faste to ye fragmente whereto Syr Hubert was attachedd, and, catchynge at ye boate, wyth ye aide of ye sayleres, Syr Hubert, berefte of al powere of motionn, was hoystedd thereinn, and, wyth hys frende and ye page, soone were in safetie conveyedd on boarde. Nor was it longe ere tymelie care restoredd Syr Hubert to hys senses, ye honeste tradere, wyth manifolde Dutche courtesies of complimente, expressinge hys joie thatt

soe farre ye enterprise hadd been crownedd wyth successe, and, wyth as manie Dutchlaunde othes, swareinge at ye discourteouse wynde, ye wych so nearlie hadd causedd al to bee loste, and whych nowe menacedd a fierce storme, and blewe righte agenste ye course thei wolde take—nathelesse wolde not Syr Hubert soe moche as utter thankes to thys hartie welcome, tyll on hys knees hadd hee blessedd ye Almi'tie for hys protecionn. Nor dyd mie ladies teares, wych ofte hadd flowedd durynge thys recitall, flowe ye lesse freelie, tho' lesse bitterlie, as Cuthberte saidd, "Nor didd Syr Hubert ryse, til in a lowe tone dyd I heare hym bless hys hartes deere wyffe, askinge of Godde to crowne hys mercie, in ye permittinge thatt hee agen on erthe sholde be unitedd to hyr; nathelesse, sholde it not bee hys holie wyll, thatt in Hevenn for al eternitie thei sholde togethere prayse and glorifie hym." And nowe was ye anchor loosenedd and ye sailes begann to bee unfurledd, ye Dutchemann resolvynge to essaie to leave ye porte despight ye wynde so vehementlie blowinge, when a boate neeredd ye shippe, al its sayles beinge set, and ye oares alsoe plyinge to quicken its course, and in al haste one jumpedd on boarde, loudlie call-

inge on ye maister for thatt hee mighte nò waies departe til thatt, in due obeisaunce to ye Governore, hys shippe hadd beene searchedd, inasmoche as suspicionn attachedd to thys so sodaine preparacionn for a voyage in soche foulle weathere. Beinge littel skilledd in ye Englyshe tongue, moche difficoltie was there to cawse th' honeste tradere to understaunde ye mattere—thys gave tyme. Wyth two wordes in ye Dutche tongue didd Trevyllian, hearinge whatt passedd, make knowne ye case to a saylere, who, tellinge themm to followe hym instantlie, descendedd belowe decke: thear stoode caskes, some filledd wyth stores, some voyde; into one of these put thei Syr Hubert, pileinge above it sondrie more wel filledd, and cordes and sailes put thei over al. Yn a momente more was Trevyllian wrappedd in an olde and tatteredd cloke, and rolledd into a sayleres bedde; ye whyles Cuthberte, wyth whatt agilitie hee colde, albeit perillynge hys limbes, ranne uponn decke and clymbedd bye ye ropes upp ye maste. Moche didd th' tradere proteste agenste soche discourteouse treatemente, but in vayne; he was compelledd to permitt those in ye boate to searche hys shippe, til, pryinge in eache hole and cornere,

came thei to where Trevyllian laie, who, wyth sondrie hartie othes in Dutcheland tongue, wolde not soe moche as turne hym rounde, and hys face buriedd in a furredd cappe, and wyth a bearde of manie daies, none colde knowe hym; albeit, as thei passedd ye caskes, one saidd—'Moche maie bee 'ensconcedd here,'—and thei lyftedd ye topp of one, when a ryghte cunninge impe, ye tradere hys sonne, efftlie hidinge behinde, pushedd downe a caske, ye wych rollinge over, upsette hym who stoode neere, and hee fallinge, caughte at ye nexte, who felle too, ye whiles otheres of ye caskes alsoe rollynge overe, moche confusionn ensuedd; whereat ye tradere faynedd greate wrathe, for thatt hys goodes sholde bee spoiledd, and angrilie didd hee proteste agenste soche usage. Ye rollinge of th' waves aidedd ye cawse, for it was no waies possabell to pursue ye searche, ye storme so moche encreasynge, and, as ye tyde ebbedd faste, th' shippe was everie momente dryven farthere fm ye porte, soe thatt ye boat wolde have difficoltie to regaine ye lande. Hee who was bearere of ye Governor hys orders nathelesse wolde not desiste, whereon ye tradere, moche chafedd, giving a signalle to hys menn, thei severed ye corde

thatt bounde ye boate, so thatt it partedd fm ye shippe, and instantlie surroundinge ye searchers, thei forcedd themm downe into ye holde, settinge a guarde soe thatt none sholde passe forthe. Thenn sett thei ye sailes, and skilfullie tackynge, after a tyme clearedd thei ye porte. Meanwhiles Syr Hubert and Trevyllian, leavinge their hideinge places, followedd ye maister to hys cabynn, and moche laffedd hee for thatt hee hadd in prisonne those who thoughte to make prisoneres of otheres. Littell waie didd thei make al daie, natheless, at nighte falle ye wynde had abaitted, so thatt thei nearedd ye shore, beinge manie myles fro' ye towne of Plymouthe; then byndinge straitlie wyth cordes ye armes and legges of those thatt laie in ye holde, one by one beare thei themm downe into a boate, ye traydere tellynge them, thatt for theire soe discourteous proceedinges delte hee in thys discourteouse waie to them, and desieringe thatt thei myghte advyse th' Governor to beware howe thatt hee sholde, in future tyme, seeke to searche ye shippes, and despoile ye goodes of those enteringe hys porte for honeste tradynge, and no waies subject to ye lawes of Englaunde or its Queene;—wyth angrie and frowninge aspecte thei answeredd

naughte, and, mockedd of al ye crewe, were thei put on shore, thenn unbounde and lefte to returne as thei mighte.—And thus endedd al perills but those of wyndes and waves, ye whych for daies didd sorelie buffette and beleager th' goode shippe: but Godde uphelde its cowrse, and at lengthe in safetie didd Syr Hubert lande at ye porte of Dunkirke, and wyth manie and hartie wordes of gratefulnesse seeke to recompense, as farre as hys meanes wolde goe, thys friendlie traydere, who, noe wise chusinge to take Syr Hubert hys profferred monies, askedd, as hys onlie recompence, thatt, sholde hys services agen bee neededd, thei wolde agen be acceptedd; and, wyth manifolde protestacionnes of moche esteeme on eithere syde, thei lefte ye soe worthie manne, and, hyringe horses, soone reachedd Saynte Omeres: and no soonere hadd Cuthberte seene hys moche lovedd younge maisters, soe thatt hee mighte reporte of theire helthe and welle doinge to mie ladie, thann sett hee forthe to returne as beste hee colde. Naught wolde hee telle of whatt perills befelle hym—albeit so longe a tyme hadd elapsedd ere hee reachedd Trewardrethe, that, couplinge thys wyth ye haggarde and moche worne lookes of

y^e poore youthe, easie is it to divine thatt hys toyles and mishappes have not beene fewe; al thatt hee recountedd was, thatt at Falmouthe, whithere as a saylere boye hee hadd workedd hys passage fro' y^e porte of Londone, fayninge to be a cityzen hys sonne escapinge in thys disguisyng fro' hys cruelle fathere, hee soe movedd y^e compassion of an auntiente dame, thatt shee equippedd hym in y^e gear wherin at laste in safetie reachedd hee Trewardrethe, for thatt hee feareddto bee markedd, if thatt hee was seene returninge in hys owne garbe.

Thys xv. daie.—Another frende have I in hevenn, and another holie intercessore, I truste, before Godd: y^e whych salutarie cogitacionn helpes mee to beare y^e mournfulle tydinges I have receavedd to-daie. F^r. Henrie Walpole is amonge y^e bleste! but greate wyl bee hys losse to y^e goode cawse, for manifolde was y^e goode thatt hys rare talentes and exceedinge pietye mighte have wroughte in thys poore countrie. Nathelesse was yt Godde hys wyll thatt no occasionne sholde hee have to laboure in hys callinge, for thatt hee was taken but a fewe houres after thatt hee landedd in Englaunde

upwardes of a yeere agone; and, beinge examinedd by y^e^ Erle of Huntingdone (thatt deadlie enemie to Godd hys Churche), hee was committedd to y^e^ Jaile at Yorke. Y^e^ Februarie ensuinge, was hee, by ordere of y^e^ Privye Councyll, removedd to y^e^ Towere of Londone, where hee sojournedd duringe more than a yeere; thence carriedd backe to Yorke to be tryedd at y^e^ Lent Assyze. Ofte tymes didd I finde meanes to have letteres conveyedd to hym at Yorke and at Londone, and receavedd f^m^ hym a lettere after thatt in y^e^ Towere hadd hee been examinedd by Toplyffe.

(Here a letter in different characters was fastened within the pages of the MS. it ran as follows:)

"Y^r^ Reverence's letteres give mee greate comforte; but iff thatt I colde but see you, tho' yt were but for one houre, it wolde bee of greater servyce to mee than I can possiblye expresse. I hope thatt what is wantinge, mie sweete L^d^ Jesu wyll supplie by othere meanes, whose heavenlie comfortte and assistaunce has alwaies hithertoe stoode bye mee in mie great-

este necessities, and, I am persuadedd, wyll continue soe to doe; synce thatt hys love for us is everlastinge. If I wolde wryte downe al thinges thatt have here passedd wyth oure adversaries, it wolde be endlesse. In mie examinacion I gave in writinge a longe accounte of mie lyfe beyonde ye seas, of ye places where I livedd, and of mie actionnes and designes, ye wych I assuredd them had no othere butt ye onlie glorie of Godd, and ye encrease of ye holie Catholique faithe; wyth wych viewe I tolde them I returnedd to Englaunde, wyth verie greate desier of ye conversionn, not onlie of ye people, butt moste of al, ye Queene herselfe, and of ye whole Englishe nobilitie; ye wych plainlie I assuredd themm I sholde ever use mie beste endeavores to bringe aboute wyth ye grace of Godd. To theyre queries concerninge otheres, I refusedd to answere; and when thatt Topliffe threatenedd thatt hee wolde make mee answere, when thatt hee hadd mee in Bridewelle, or in ye Towere, I tolde hym thatt oure Lorde Godd, I hopedd, wolde never permitt mee, for feare of anie tormentes whatsoever, to do aughte agenste hys divine Matie or agenste myne owne consciaunce, or to ye prejudice of justice and ye

innocence of otheres. I have hadd varyouse conferaunces and disputacionnes wyth manie of y^e^ heritickes; and whereas I believedd I sholde have beene tryedd at y^e^ laste assyze in thys citye (Yorke), I sente in writinge to y^e^ Lorde Presidente al those conferaunces and disputacionnes, who hadd orderedd mee penn, ink and papere for thatt purpose. To th' wych I joynedd a large discowrse or treatyse, in y^e^ wych I exhortedd al to beware of false prophettes, and to give eare to y^e^ voyce of y^e^ Holie Church, y^e^ spouse of y^e^ kinge, y^e^ howse of y^e^ vineyarde, and y^e^ citie of Christe. One of y^e^ ministeres complaynedd of mee moche to y^e^ Presydente, for beinge so bolde as to put downe soche thinges in writinge; but colde hee not refute what was writtenn, and indeede thei seeme to mee to bee moche confoundedd. Blessedd bee Jesu! *Qui dat os insipienti, cui non possunt resistere sapientes.* I wante moche to have a boke or two for a fewe houres, but yff that I cannott have them, Jesu our Godde and Lorde is at hande, and hee is y^e^ eternalle wisdome. Y^r^ Reverence wyll bee pleasedd to praye to hym thatt hee maye alwaies stande by mee, and thatt all thinges maie turne oute to

hys glorie. I am moche astonishedd for thatt soe vyle a creature as I am, sholde bee soe neare, as thei telle mee, to a crowne of martyrdome; but this I knowe for certayne, thatt y^e^ bloode of mie moste blessedd Savioure and Redeemer, and hys moste sweete love, is able to make mee worthie of yt. *Omnia possum in eo qui me confortat.* Y^r^ Reverence, moste lovinge fathere, is engagedd in y^e^ midste of y^e^ battaile: I sit here an idle spectatore of y^e^ fielde. Y^e^ Presidente enquiredd of mee who was y^e^ superioure of oure societie in this kingdome, whether yt was this or y^e^ othere, or who it was. Topliffe answeredd hee knew who it was, and namedd hym. I beg y^r^ reverence wolde communicate thys lettere to all oure frendes. I desyer to give myeselfe to everye one of themm, and more especiallye to al oure moste deere fatheres and brotheres of y^e^ Societie of Jesu, to whose prayeres, laboures and sacrifices, as I have a share soe have I great confidence. About midlente I hope mie lott wyll bee decidedd, eithere for lyfe or dethe; for then y^e^ assyzes will bee holdene here agenn. In y^e^ mean whyles, I have leysure to prepare mieselfe, and expecte wyth goode courage whatevere hys divine Ma^tie^ shall

bee pleasedd to appointe for mee. I beg y^r^ reverence to joyne y^r^ holie prayers with mie poore ones, for thatt I maie walke worthie of thatt highe and holie Name and professionne whereto I am calledd, y^e^ wych, I trust in y^e^ mercie of oure Lorde, hee wyll graunte mee—nott regardinge soe moche mie manie imperfectionnes, as y^e^ fervent laboures, prayers and holie sacrifices, of soe manie fatheres, and mie brotheres hys servauntes, who are emploiedd over al y^e^ worlde in hys servyce; and I hope, throughe y^e^ mercies of mie sweete Savioure and Lorde, thatt I shall alwaies bee readie, whethere livinge or dyeinge, to glorifie hym, y^e^ wych will bee for mie eternalle happiness. I can never ende whenn thatt I gett anie tyme to write to y^r^ reverence, y^e^ wych I have seldome beene able to doe, and whethere, as longe as I live, I ever shal have anothere opportunitie, I knowe nott. I confessedd in mie examinacionnes thatt I hadd labouredd for y^e^ increase of y^e^ two seminaries in Spayne, and for thatt of Sainte Omeres, and thatt I hadd returnedd hartie thankes to hys Catholic Ma^tie^ for hys greate favoures to y^e^ Seminarie at Sainte Omeres. I alsoe confessedd thatt al mie actionnes hadd alwaies in viewe

y^e goode of otheres, and no ones harme; y^e procuringe peace amonge al, and y^e propagatinge oure holie Catholic faithe and y^e kingdome of X^te to y^e utmoste of mie powere. This was y^e summ of mie generall confession, y^e wych I gave in writinge, signedd by myne owne haunde, to y^e Presidente and to Topliffe. May Jesu alwaies be wythe y^r reverence. *Oremus pro invicem.*"

From mie worthie friende y^e moche esteemedd superioure of oure Societie in thys countrie, Father Garnet, I have alsoe receayvedd this recitall of parte whereoff y^e nowe holie martyr Walpole suffered.

(To this page of the MS. the following letter, in a different hand-writing from the former, was affixed:)

"Blessedd Fathere Walpole mett in y^e Towere of Londone wyth y^e greateste miserie and povertie, soe thatt y^e lieutenente himselfe, tho' otherwise an harde hartedd and barbarouse mann, was movedd to enquier after some of y^e Fathere hys relationns, and tolde them thatt hee was in greate and extraordinarie wante, withoute anie

thinge to cover hym, and thatt at a seasonn when thatt ye colde was moste sharpe and piercing, soe thatt hymselfe, altho' an enemie, out of pure campassion, hadd given hym strawe whereonn to sleepe. Besides this, ye Fathere hymselfe, in publike courte, upon occasionn of answaringe some question thatt was putt to hym, declaredd thatt hee hadd beene torturedd fourteene tymes; and yt is verie welle knowne howe cruelle anie one of those tortures is, ye wych are nowe in use—for it is a common thinge to hange them up in ye aire sixe or sevenn houres by ye haunds, and by ye meanes of certaine ironns, ye wych holde theire haunds faste and cut them, thei shedde moche bloode in ye torture—ye force of thys tormente maie be gatheredd fm what happenedd laste Lente to a laic calledd Atkinson, whom thei moste cruellie torturedd in this wyse, to oblige hym to accuse hys own maister and other Catholikes and preestes, and kepte hym soe longe in ye torture thatt hee was at lengthe takenn awaye for deade after manye houres sufferinge, and, in effect, diedd in two houres. Some tyme after, thei carriedd ye Fathere backe to Yorke, to be there tryedd at ye mid-lente assyzes. In al that journie hee never wente

into a bedd, or evenn laiedd hym down uponn a bedd to reste hym fm ye fatigue of ye daie, butt hys sleepe was upon ye bare grounde. When hee came to Yorke hee was putt into prisonne, where hee waitedd manie daies for ye judges cominge. In ye prisonne hee hadd naughte but one poore matt, three feete longe, on ye wych hee made hys prayeres upon hys knees for greate parte of ye nighte, and when he slepte yt was uponn ye grounde, leaning upon ye same matt."

(Here a part of the letter and its conclusion seemed to have been torn off.)

I finde thatt hee was accusedd at hys tryall of three thinges; 1stly, thatt hee was a preeste ordainedd by ye See of Rome; 2dly, for thatt hee was a Jesuitt, or one of ye societie of Jesu; 3dly, thatt hee returnedd to hys own countrie to exercyse ye actes of these two callinges. In a defence, ye wych for boldness of speeche, as for pithie reasoninge, was moche admiredd of al, hee shewedd thatt naughte of al thys colde be treasonn, for thatt beinge a preeste was a dignitie and office institutedd by Xte hymselfe,

and givenn by hym to hys apostles, who ware preestes; as alsoe ye holie fatheres and doctores of ye Churche, who convertedd ye worlde, and ye firste teachers who broughte ye Englishe to ye lighte of ye gospelle, were preestes. At greate lengthe descantedd hee thereonn, affirminge thatt to bee a preeste colde no waies bee treasone. Judge Beamonte then spake, sayinge, thatt returninge into ye kingdome agenste ye lawes was treasonn, not ye beinge a preeste. Whereon arguedd ye holie fathere, thatt iff beinge a preeste is noe treasonn, neither colde it bee to doe ye duties of hys callinge. Then askedd ye Judge iff thatt a preeste conspiredd agenste ye personn of hys prince, wolde not thatt bee treasonn. Yea of a suretie, answeredd ye fathere, but neither for beinge a preeste, or for doinge thatt whereto hee was enjoinedd by ye dutyes of hys callinge wolde make hym a traytore, butt ye committinge a crymc contrarie to ye dutie of a preeste, ye wych righte stoutlie deniedd hee thatt hee hadd done. Then saidd Beamonte, for thatt hee hadd conversedd wyth ye Kinge of Spayne, with Parsonnes and Holte, and sondrie otheres, rebells and traitores to ye kingedome, and for thatt hee hadd returnedd

to ye countrie contrarie to ye lawes, therfore muste hee bee a traytore. Vainlie dyd Walpole urge, thatt to treate and converse with anie personn whatsoever out of ye kingdome colde not make hym a traitore, speciallie when thatt hee colde noe waies prove thatt whereof hee hadd treatedd was treasonn, nor colde hys returne to hys native countrie bee treasonn, since thatt ye cawse wherefore hee returnedd was to do no evill to ye Queene or to ye kingedome. Beamonte repliedd, thatt a preeste returninge fm beyonde seas, and not presentinge himselfe before a Justice, withinn three daies, to make ye accustomedd submissionn to ye Queenes Matie in matteres of religione, shal be deemedd a traitore. "Then am I oute of ye case," rejoinedd Fr Walpole, "for thatt I was apprehendedd ere I hadd beene one whole daie on Englishe grounde." Whereat Beamonte, beinge confoundedd, Judge Elvynn askedd of hym was hee readie to make thatt submissionn to ye Queene in matteres of religionn, ye wych ye lawes of ye kingedome requiredd; to acknowledge hyr supremacie and abjure ye Pope. Fr Walpole answeredd, hee knewe not what lawes thei hadd made in Englaunde ye whyles hee was

in other countries, nor what submissionn those lawes requiredd, but of thys was he certayne, thatt noe lawe colde oblige anie one iff it was nott accordinge to ye lawe of Godde, and thatt ye submissionn to be payde to erthlie princes muste ever bee subordinate to thatt submissionn ye wych wee owe to ye Kinge of heavenn and erthe. Then added hee,—"Ye sitt here, mie lordes, at this presente in judgemente as menn, and judge as soche, beinge subjecte to erroure and passionn; but know, of a certaintie, for thatt there is a sov'raigne judge who wyll judge righteouslie, whom in all thinges we muste obey in ye firste place, and then our lawfulle prynces in soche thinges as bee lawfulle, and noe farther." Here spake ye Lorde Presidente sayinge, thatt thei delte most favourablie wyth hym, notwithstandinge al hys treasonnes and conspiracies wyth the personnes aforesaide, to offer hym ye benefitt of ye lawe, iff thatt hee wolde butt make ye submissionn orderedd by ye lawe, and thatt wolde hee not accept thereof, it was meete thatt hee sholde bee punishedd accordinge to ye lawe. Fr Walpole replyedd, sayinge, "There is naughte, mie lorde, wherein I wolde nott ryghte willinglie submitt mieselfe,

providedd yt bee not agenste Godde; butt maie hys divyne Ma^tie never suffere mee to gyve consentemente to y^e leaste thinge wherebie hee maie bee dishonoredd, nor maye you desier it of mee. As regardinge y^e Queene, dailie do I praye for hyr to our Lorde Godde, for thatt hee wolde bless hyr wyth hys holie spiritt, and give hyr grace to do hyr dutie in al thinges in thys worlde, to y^e ende thatt shee maie enjoie glorie eternall in y^e worlde to come. And Godd is mie witnesse, thatt to al here presaunt, and speciallie to mie accuseres and soche as desier mie dethe, I wishe as for mieselfe y^e salvationn of theire soules, and thatt to this ende thei maie live in y^e trewe Catholike faithe, y^e onlie waye to happinesse eternalle." Y^e cowrte, fearinge y^e effecte wych y^e holie confessores wordes seemedd to make on y^e peopell, who well perceayved for thatt y^e noyse aboute treasonn was but a pretence, and thatt submission to y^e Queenes religionn was al whereonn thei insistedd, thoughte it meete thearfore to ende y^e tryall; whereupponn y^e Judges summonedd up y^e evidaunce agenste y^e prisonnere, y^e wych was no othere than hys own confession, (videlicit) thatt hee was a preeste and a Jesuitt,

thatt hee had been wyth y^e^ Kinge of Spayne, thatt hee hadd treatedd wyth Fathere Parsonnes and Fathere Holte, and sondrie whome thei calledd fugitives, rebells, and traytoures, thatt hee hadd returnedd to Englaunde to converte hys countrie (thatt is, as thei calledd it, to tempte hyr Ma^ties^ subjectes fro' y^e^ religionn establishedd by lawe, and to unite them to y^e^ See of Rome.) Then were y^e^ jurie directedd to fynde hym guiltie of y^e^ indictemente, to whome, as thei were leavinge y^e^ cowrte, Fathere Walpole addressedd hym, sayinge, thatt hee confessedd righte willinglie thatt hee was a preeste and of y^e^ Societie of Jesu, and thatt hee came to converte hys countrie to y^e^ trewe faithe, and to invite sinneres to repentaunce; thatt never wolde hee denie it, and thatt it was y^e^ dewtie of hys callinge; and, askedd hee of them, thatt sholde thei finde aughte else in hym noe waies accordinge to hys professionn, thatt thei wolde shew hym noe favore, desieringe them thatt thei wolde acte accordinge to theire consciaunces, rememberinge thatt thei wolde one daie have to render an accounte to Godde. Y^e^ Jurie returnedd quicklie, bringinge in a verdicte guiltie, y^e^ wych Fathere Walpole hearinge shew-

edd exceedinge joie, returninge moste hartie thankes to y^e^ divine Ma^tie^ when thatt hee was commaundedd to dye y^e^ Mondaie nexte ensuinge. Hee was visittedd by sondrie wythin thatt space of tyme, who mervayledd to see wyth what joie hee lookedd for y^e^ happie houre of hys dethe. Hee was drawne to y^e^ place of execucionn wythout y^e^ cittye, wyth anothere confessore, one Alexander Rawlins, y^e^ same who some years agone arrivedd in Englaunde wyth Edmonde Genninges, and who, labouringe since thatt tyme in X^te^ hys vineyarde, was apprehendedd not manie moneths agone, imprisonedd in Yorke Castell, tryedd, and as needs muste followe, doomedd to dye. When thatt Fathere Walpole was broughte to y^e^ hurdle whereon Rawlins hadd already beene some tyme, thei tenderlie embraced eache other; butt noe waies chusinge them to discourse, Fathere Walpole was placedd at Rawlins' feete, wyth hys hedd close to y^e^ horse hys tayle. Arrivedd at y^e^ gallowes, Rawlins firstlie was orderedd to mounte y^e^ laddere, y^e^ wych hee dyd ryghte chearfullie, kissinge y^e^ gallowes, y^e^ laddere, and lastlie y^e^ rope, sayinge thei were y^e^ happie instrumentes y^e^ wych were to sende hym to heavenn; but

wolde thei not lett hym speake, turninge hym quicklie off whyles ye sweete name of Jesu was on hys lippes: and cuttinge hym downe thei cruellie quarteredd hym whyles hee yett livedd, compellinge Fathere Walpole to looke on hys tormentes, biddinge hym to bee more wise than to followe hys ensample, and offeringe hym hys lyfe iff thatt hee wolde conforme, ye wyche hee rejectinge, wente upp ye laddere, and, after declaringe agenste ye Queene hyr spiritualle supremacie, when thei askedd hym concerninge yt, and prayinge for al, speciallie for those thatt causedd hys dethe, and begginge for ye prayeres of al Catholikes, hee liftedd hys eyes and haunds to heavenn, and recitedd aloud ye Pater Noster, then commencinge ye Ave Maria, wych wyth al impatiaunce wolde thei not heare, but turnedd hym off ye laddere; and quicklie after cutt ye rope, and soe dismemberedd hym, movinge ye beholderes to moche pittie, and admiracionn of ye faithe ye wych colde inspire hym wyth soe moche constancie to endure.

And for thatt, duringe soe manie yeares, I have committedd to writtinge as I mighte, al thatt has come to mie knowledge concerninge religiouse matteres in this countrie, as wel as of

those who have suffered by dethe, or forfeitures for y^e^ faithe, for thatt our seminaries beyonde seas desier to have transmittedd to them, as far as maye bee, al thatt passes in y^e^ smal and sufferinge portionn of y^e^ Churche in thys realme, I wyll endeavore to recall to minde, and from letteres and sondrie documentes in mie custodie, marke downe, accordinge to y^e^ yeares, al who have mett wyth y^e^ crowne of martyrdome, firstlie commencinge wyth mie soe lovedd spirituall guide and councellor—

Fathere Maine, y^e^ proto-martyr, as hee maie be called, beinge y^e^ firste thatt sufferedd for our holie cause—A.D. m.d.lxxbii.

Yn y^e^ nexte yeare, Johnne Nelsonne, who was ordainedd wyth mieselfe and otheres by y^e^ Arche-bishoppe of Cambraye, was put to dethe, as alsoe thatt vertuous gentelmann Maister Tho^s^ Sherwoode.

A.D. m.d.lxxxi.—Everard Hance sufferedd. Mye belovedd frende, Fathere Campione, to whose councylls I owe it thatt, passynge fromm Douaye to Rome y^e^ yeare before thatt I was sent to Englaunde, I cravedd and obtainedd admittaunce into y^e^ Societie of Jesu, whereof mye frende was justlie regardedd as one of its

bryghteste luminaryes in thys countrie, hee sealedd hys faithe wyth hys bloode alsoe thatt yeare, yn companie wyth y^e^ holie preestes Sherwyne and Brianne.

Yn y^e^ nexte yeare moche was encreasedd y^e^ numberes of y^e^ martyrs. Tho^s^ Forde, Sherte, Johnsonn, Fylbie, Kyrbie, Richardsonne and Cottame, sufferedd at Tyburne; Lacye, Kirkmann and Thomsonn, at Yorke; al beinge preestes; and y^e^ Ladie Petre hyr chaplaine, Maister Payne, putt thei to dethe at Chelmsforde.

A.D. m.d.lxxxiii.—Onlie two preestes sufferedd for y^e^ faithe, Harte and Thirkyll, and one Maister Slade, a schoolmaister, wyth hys frende Maister John Bodge, Maister of Artes in Newe Colledge att Oxforde, whoe, mislykinge y^e^ newe religionn whereinn hee was broughte upp, wente to Douaye, and was receavedd into y^e^ Churche; whence returninge to Englaunde, he spake soe stoutlie concernynge y^e^ faithe, thatt hee was doomedd to die in maintayninge itt.

Yn y^e^ two followinge yeares, firstlie Haydocke, Fenne, Hemerforde, Nutter and Mundynn, al preestes, were put to dethe at Tyburne on y^e^ same daie, as was one Carter a pryntere, for im-

pryntinge a boke calledd **Treatyse of Schisme**, agenste Catholickes goinge to y^e^ Protestante places of worshippe, in y^e^ whych a sentaunce, touchynge Judith and Holofernes, by a forcedd construccionn was therebie interpretedd to bee an exhortacionn to murthere y^e^ Queene; alsoe one Bell, a preeste, sufferedd at Lancaster: wyth Maister Fynche, who, synce hys convercion to y^e^ faythe, had so zealouslie assistedd y^e^ spyritual labourers in Godd hys vineyarde, givyng y^e^ preestes meanes to instructe y^e^ faithfulle, causynge divers to meete togethere for godlie exercyses, and hymselfe labourynge as a catechyste, thatt colde hee not escape notyce, and y^e^ Erle of Derbye causedd hym to be takenne and condemnedd. Maister Whyte was moste cruellie martyredd at Wrexhame. Bennet, a preeste, was twyce cruellie torturedd by y^e^ councyll of y^e^ Marshes of Walles, but thatt hee wolde confesse naughte, hee was sente to Londone, and aftere some time, beinge in prisonn wyth xxx othere preestes, hee was banishedd beyonde seas. Maister Pughe was also caste into prisonn wyth hym, and sorelie rackedd. Roberte Holmes, Wakemann, and Lomax, preestes, dyedd in prisone fro' th' manie privacionnes

thei underwente, and ye unhealthie state of ye dungeones; also Maister Alworthe, thruste downe by ye Jailere into ye commonn sewere, beinge heavilie ironnedd, dyed ther in fewe daies. Att this tyme, alsoe, were ye howses of fiftie of ye gentrie in Lancaschire, under pretext of beinge searchedd for preestes, ransackedd in one nyghte; soche was the vehemence of those, whoe soughte to annull the trewe faythe in thys countrie; ye gentrie sente thei to diverse prisonnes, after thatt theire propertie was despoyledd; and mie kinnesmann, Maister Baslowe, despite hys beinge in hys bedd wyth sore infirmitie, nathelesse was imprisonnedd alsoe. At thys tyme came forthe a boke, writtene (as was thoughte) by our arche enemie ye Lorde Treasurere, intituledd **Justitia Britanica**, wherebie it was endeavouredd to prove thatt ye Catholikes who had sufferedd since ye comynge to ye throne of oure graciouse Queene, hadd paide ye penaltie for treasonne, not sufferedd on religiouse matteres. Oure stronge and valiaunte champione, Doctore Allen, forthwyth answeredd ye same in hys modeste answere to ye Englyshe persecutores, convictinge ye authore of **Justitia** of sondrie lyes; thys moche inflamedd ye wrathe

of y^e^ Protestant partie; and a preeste, by name Tho^s^ Aldfielde, fyndinge meanes to importe into thys countrie some copies of y^e^ boke, dispersedd themm abrode by y^e^ aide of one Webleye, whearfore were thei bothe seizedd and sorelie torturedd; and, beinge triedd, thei were executedd at Tyburne. Hugh Taylore, a preeste, was martyredd at Yorke, and Maister Marmaduke Bowes wyth hym, for thatt y^e^ preeste was founde in hys howse. These were y^e^ firste thatt sufferedd under y^e^ bloodie acte passedd thatt yeare, wherebie it was made highe treasonn for anie native of hyr M'ties realmes, made preeste synce y^e^ firste yeare of hyr raigne, by authoritie derivedd fro' Rome, to returne into thys kingdome, or remaine wythin it, and felonie for anie whoe harboure or releeve anie preeste, knowinge hym as soche. Foure preestes dyedd in prisonn of whatt thei enduredd, Crowthere, Poole, Vaux and Jetter. And y^e^ piouse and moste venerable confessore, John Feckenham, late Abbott of y^e^ (nowe, alass! soe profainedd) Abbeye of Westmynstre, dyedd alsoe, after manie yeares close custodie in y^e^ castelle of Wysbiche. Nor were there lesse than lxx banishedd beyonde sea in thys yeare, mostlie preestes, sondrie whearof

hadd beene manie yeares in prisonne, and were infirme, and sicke, beinge advancedd in age.

A.D. m.d.lxxxi.—Ye sadde liste is moche augmentedd. Firstlie, commenceinge wyth Edwarde Transhame, ye Bachelore of Artes fromm Sainte Johnnes at Oxforde, whoe, ye yeare before I came to Englaunde, arrivedd at Douaye, thear to profess ye faithe—havinge forsakene th' doctrynes whereinn hee hadd beene bredd. In iii yeares more, hee came over to thys countrie a preeste, and, wyth Nicholas Wheelere, alsoe a preeste, bothe were putt to dethe, beinge quarteredd alyve at Tyburne; and, soone after, Sergeante and Thompson, preestes likewise. Yn ye Islande of Wighte, alsoe, were martyredd Anderton and Marsden. At Yorke, Ingolbye and Finglowe; at Glos'tere, Sandys; and agen, at Tyburne, Lowe, Addams and Dybdale—al of these were preestes. Then came ye soe barbarouse murthere of mie kinneswomann Mistresse Margarette Clitheroe at Yorke; Maister Bickardike, for refusinge to attende ye Protestante servyce, and Maister Langley for harbouringe preestes, were alsoe put to dethe in ye same cittie. Johnn Harrison, a preeste, diedd in prisonn.

Y^e^ nexte yeare of tribulacionn openedd wyth y^e^ dethe of a noble and highe borne Pryncesse, whose chiefe and rulynge sinne (soe it hath alwaies seemedd to mee) was thatt of professynge y^e^ Catholike faithe. Manie were y^e^ crimes laide to y^e^ charge of y^e^ ill-fatedd Queene of Scottes, and manie were y^e^ accusacionns, whereof no proofes colde thei shewe. Nathelesse, hyr firme and loyalle holdinge to hyr faithe, was, in th' mindes of manie, as it were y^e^ clowde thatt darkenedd hyr once soe brighte destinie in this worlde, onlie, I trustē, to shyne y^e^ brightere in eternitie, but thearfore doe I classe Marie, y^e^ Scottishe Queene, wyth those who sufferedd for y^e^ faithe. Y^e^ same yeare, alsoe, theese preestes ware martyredd:—Tho^s^ Pylecharde, att Dorchester; Sykes, Douglass and Crowe, att Yorke; Suttonn, at Stafforde; Hambley, at Charde; and at Glos'ter, Steven, Roushamm, whoe, minister of y^e^ Protestante doctrynes at y^e^ same tyme wyth mieselfe at Sainte Maries at Oxforde, ofte tymes disputedd wyth mee, whenn thatt I commencedd to doubte y^e^ truthe of y^e^ newe doctrynes; and when I lefte Oxforde to repaire to Douaye, I alsoe lefte thear mie opponente Roushamm, on whome nathelesse mie disputacionns

hadd effect; and, in iij yeares more, hee alsoe lefte ye Colledge, hys ministrie, and hys creede, beinge in tyme ordainedd preeste. Hee was sent to Englaunde, soone apprehendedd, and confinedd in ye Towere in ye vileste dungeone it containedd, calledd *Lyttle Ease*, and wel deservedd itt ye name. Lyinge here ij yeares, hee was thenn banishedd ye realme; but soe inflamedd was hys zeale, thatt shortlie hee returnedd, and lyving at mie Ladie Straunge hyr mansionn neere Glos'ter, wheare most diligentlie hee labouredd in hys holie callynge, hee was agen takenn and putt to dethe. Martyn Thertone, a preeste, and Maister Thymelbye, dyedd in prisonne, and xxx preestes were imprisonedd in Wisbytch Castell. Sondrie beinge dedde thatt hadd beene sente thear before, there were in thatt prisonn then xxxiij preestes, and a worthie gentelmann, Maister Thos Poundes, who sufferedd moche for ye faithe.

A.D. m.d.lxxxiii.—Thys is ye blackeste yeere thatt is notedd in mie soe dismal registrie. At Derbye were putt to dethe Garlyke, Ludlamm and Sympson, preestes—Dean, a preeste, att Myles-End-Greene, and one Weblye, a laic, for aydinge hym—Gunter, a preeste, at Newgate,

and Morton, a preeste, wyth Maister Hugh Moore, a gentelmann, att Lincolnes Inne Fieldes. Thomas Holforde, a preeste, y^e^ same who was caughte as hee wente forthe fro' y^e^ howse of mie kinnesmann Maister Swythin Welles, where hee hadd been sayinge Masse, was martyredd at Clerkenwelle. Clayton, a preeste, and alsoe Maister Tho^s^ Felton, were putt to dethe att Branforde; and, att Tyburne, Richarde Leigh, a preeste, with Maister Edwarde, kinnesmann to Maister Shellye of Sussexe, Martyn Flower, and Rock, laymenn, as alsoe Mistresse Margaret Warde. Willyam Way, a preeste, att Kingstone; and, att Cantorberie, Welcox, Edwarde Campian, and Buxton, al preestes, with Maister Widmerpoole, once tutor to Lorde Northumberlaunde hys sonnes, and who sufferedd for thatt hee showedd moche hospitalitye to preestes, and for thatt hee tooke one to y^e^ howse of y^e^ Ladie Northumberlande. Att Chichester were executedd Crokett and James, both preestes. Att Ipswych, Robinson; and, att Clerkenwelle, Hartlye, and Welldone, al preestes, wyth whom alsoe was putt to dethe one Sutton, a schoole maister. Att Yorke, Hewitte and Burdenn,

preestes; and, at Glos'ter, Maister W^m^ Lampeleye.

Yn y^e^ followinge yeere, as comparedd wyth y^e^ foregoinge, more breathinge tyme was allowedd; albeit sondrie were martyredd for y^e^ faithe. Amyas and Dalbye, att Yorke; and, at Oxforde, Nicolls and Yousleye, al preestes—wyth theese laste alsoe sufferedd Maister Belson, taken in y^e^ Inn att Oxforde wyth y^e^ preestes, hee havinge gone to visytt them; and a poore servaunte mann of y^e^ Inn, a Welchmann, one Pritcharde, who longe hadd done signall servyce to y^e^ poore Catholikes of y^e^ towne. A vertuouse widowe, who kepte y^e^ Inn, beinge tryedd, was caste in a premunire, losynge al hyr goodes, and doomedd to perpetuall imprisonmente, y^e^ whych sentance shee receavedd wyth joie, greevinge onlie for thatt shee was not to die wyth hyr ghostlie fatheres. Agen, att Yorke, Spencer, a preeste, and Maister Hardestye, who hadd harbouredd in hys howse y^e^ holie mann. Att Londone was martyredd a preeste, one Crystopher Bayles, and wyth hym Maister Horner and Maister Blake, for harbouringe and relievinge hym. Att Rochester, ij preestes, Myles and Dycconsonne; agen, att Londone, Jones and Myddeltonn,

preestes. Att Durham, alsoe, Edmond Duke, Hyll, Johnns, Hogge and Holydaye, al preestes. And nowe ye flayme of persecucionn began to rage vehemente as before.

A.D. m.d.xxi.—Thorpe, a preeste, in hys olde age, havynge longe labouredd on ye missyon in Englaunde, was martyredd att Yorke; as alsoe Maister Watkinsonn, who hadd for yeeres harbouredd hym, and servedd othere preestes al hee colde; hee was agedd and infirme, and, beinge moche respectedd, was offeredd hys lyfe iff thatt hee wolde butt goe to ye Protestante worshipp, whych hee refusedd. Att Londone, Scotte and Beesleye, preestes. Dycconsonne, a preeste, sufferedd at Winchestre, and Maister Mylnere alsoe, for harbouringe hym; thys laste hadd a wyffe and viij chylderne, and, for verie pittie, ye Judge councylledd hym once to goe to th' Protestante worshippe, wherebie hys lyfe wolde be sparedd, but hee wolde not, dyinge wyth manifolde courage. VII maydene gentelwomenn of goode families, were triedd alsoe, and doomedd to die, for thatt thei attendedd Mass sayd bie ye preeste Dycconsonne; butt ye Judge, willynge nott to putt themm to dethe, thoghte thatt ye sentaunce wolde frighte themm fm abyd-

inge in theyre faithe, soe reprievedd themm. Whereuponn thei al praiedd to die wyth theire spyritual fathere, urgynge thatt, beinge sharers in hys supposedd cryme, thei faine wolde bee sharers alsoe in hys punishmente. Att Dorchester was martyredd Maister Pykes, for beinge convertedd to y^e^ Churche, and beinge cutt down alyve, as itt is alwaies done, yett beinge stronge, hee stoode on hys feete, and moste cruellie was hee woundedd ere thei colde slaie hym outryghte. Thenn sufferedd at Londone mie soe deare and lamentedd kinnesmann Swythinn Welles, wyth thatt moste noble confessore and martyr, Edmonde Jenninges; as alsoe White and Plasdenn, preestes; and wyth them Maister Bryann, Lacye, Mason, and Sydneye Hodgesonn, for aydinge and harbouringe y^e^ preestes.—Thus endedd thys moste bloodie yeare.

In y^e^ ij nexte some respite was givenn. Tho' att Londone sufferedd Patersonn and Portmore, preestes; and Maister Roberte Asheton. Att Newcastell, Watterson, a preeste; att Wynchestre, Maister Bride, a youthe onlie of xix yeares, for thatt hee was a converte. Att Yorke, Anthonie Page, and Lampton at Newcastell, bothe preestes; and att Beaumariss in Wayles, one

Davyes, a preeste alsoe, wyth moche greefe of al in th' towne, for ye goode hee hadd done to al.

A.D. m.D.xcib.—Ye bloodie catalogue begins wyth Maister Speede at Durhame, ye same who for soe longe tyme hadd harbouredd preestes, and servedd ye goode cawse by guidinge and conductynge themm fro' one howse to othere of th' Catholike gentrie: moche endeavoure usedd thei who apprehendedd hym, to prevayle on hym to conforme, but vainlie, and wyth greate constancie hee mett hys dethe. Att Newgate was martyredd Harryngtonn, a preeste; and nextlie came ye soe sadde tragedie of mie esteemedd frende Fathere Cornellius hys dethe, wyth thatt of ye soe generouse and excellente youthe Maister Bosgrave, as alsoe ye servauntes Careye and Salmonn. Att Durham a preeste namedd Bost was putt to dethe, he thatt not manie yeeres before was Maister of Artes att Cambridge, but whych hee resignedd whenn thatt hee came to see ye truthe, and passinge over to Rhemes, there professedd hee ye trewe faithe, and, beinge in tyme ordainedd, came on ye Englishe missionn. Att Cambridge hee was ye greate frende of Tobie Mathewes, nowe call'd

Bishopp of Durham, who, nathelesse Bost hadd lefte ye Protestante doctrynes, ever retainedd moche esteeme for hym, and whenn hee hearde thatt hee hadd sufferedd, saidd, "Pittie is it soe moche worthe sholde have dyedd thys daie." Att Newcastell sufferedd Ingram, a preeste, who was tryedd and condemnedd wyth Bost; and soone after, at Darlyngtonn, Swallowele ye protestante mynistere, who hadd soe latelie beene convertedd, moche to ye anger of manie; hys dethe was more than ordinarie cruelle, and longe didd lyfe remaine in hym; after thatt beynge cutt downe, hee was quarteredd. Att Yorke sufferedd Osbaldestonn, a preeste.

And now have I neerlie endedd mie soe dismal recytall, beinge come to thys tyme wherein I am writinge. Moche I feare, howsomever, thatt ye fyer of persecucionn is raging as ever; for, tho' thys yere is as it were but yonge, iij deths have I to notifye, and once more renewe my greefes in thinkinge on ye martyrdome of mie frende Fathere Southwelle, wyth thatt of hym who was to mee as a brothere, Fr Walpole, wyth th' preeste Rawlyns.—And forasmoche as ye searcheres relax not in theire endeavores to entrappe al thei cann, and thatt styll ye prisonnes are full

to overflowynge, soe muste I thinke thatt, sholde th' Almtie stil spare mie lyfe, and keepe mee fro' ye perylls thatt surrounde mee, I shall in future tyme have agen ye soe sorrowfulle taske of addinge freshe martyres to mie liste. On lookinge over ye whych I finde thatt duringe xviii yeeres wherof I have treatedd, beinge ye tyme I have nowe passedd on ye missionn in Englaunde, theare have perishedd on ye scaffolde cxliv; wheroff an hondredd bee preestes. And whenn to them is addedd ye manie whoe have diedd in prisonn, or beyonde seas, in banishmente for theire faythe, manie whereoff were amonge ye higheste nobilitie and flowere of ye launde, fearfulle in verie truthe is ye number. Th' Erle of Arundel; ye Lorde Morleye who diedd in Spayne, selfe banishedd for thatt hee colde nott practyse hys religione as hee desiredd; ye Lorde Dacre, who, selfe banishedd, diedd beyonde seas; th' Erle of Westmorelaunde, ye same who joynedd mie Lorde Northumberlaunde hys rysinge in ye Northe, and flyinge into Flanderes dyedd there; ye Lorde Northumberlaunde hymselfe, beheddedd att Yorke; and hys brothere, Erle after hys deathe, who, solelie on religiouse matteres, sufferedd manie yeeres imprisonmente,

and was founde murtheredd in y^e^ Towere, nott, it was saide, wythoute y^e^ knowledge of mie Lorde of Leycestre. Al theese, and manie more amonge y^e^ gentrie, have sufferedd losse of lyfe, libertie, or laundes, for thatt thei remaynedd trewe to y^e^ Churche of X^te^.

Synce y^e^ yeere m.ᵬ·lɣɣi, I finde thatt, for denieynge y^e^ supremacie of y^e^ Queene, no waies in temporall but in spyrituall matteres, (for none ever saide thatt hyr Ma^tie^ was nott Queene of these realmes, or disputedd hyr authoritie in matteres of governemente, but onlie deniedd for thatt shee was nott y^e^ hedde of y^e^ Churche of X^te^, and thatt to y^e^ Pope alone, who descendedd in successionn fro' y^e^ Apostles, to whom can there bee jurisdictionn givenn in affayres spyrituall); but for thys, downe to y^e^ presaunte yeere were putt to dethe xii personnes, laie men as welle as preestes.

Synce y^e^ yeere m.ᵬ.lɣɣiiii, for pretendedd plottes, some beinge accusedd of willynge to murthere y^e^ Queene, some saide to bee favouringe foraine invasionn—albeit noe proofes were there of guilte, ix sufferedd dethe. For takinge parte wyth y^e^ Lorde Northumberlaunde, iv besides y^e^ Erle hymselfe.

In m.ᴐ.lxxxi, and ye nexte yeere, xi, al beinge preestes, laide downe theire lyves, falselie accusedd of plottes agenste ye governmente carryedd on at Rhemes or Rome.—Accusedd of attemptes to release fro' hyr prisonn ye Scottishe Queene, and so seize on ye Queene of Englaund, xiv were putt to dethe, as welle as ye haplesse Pryncesse hyrselfe. Of preestes, Jesuitts, Regulars and Seculars, who have laide downe theire lyves, for thatt, obeyinge Godd rathere thann mann, thei wolde practyse theire holie functions in thys unhappie launde, thear have beene, downe to ye presente daie, martyredd xcvii; and xi laimenn for thatt thei were reconcylledd to ye trewe Churche; xxij laycs, whereoff ij were women, have beene putt to dethe, for thatt, beinge Catholikes, thei harbouredd and assistedd ye preestes; and xvi have diedd in prisonn, preestes and laycs, whereof manie, as welle as in ye foregoinge listes, were of ye nobles and gentrie, boastinge of ye fayreste lineage in th' launde—whereto ye names of Percye, Arundel, Nevyll, Talbote, Howarde, Tychborne, Shellye, Welles, Maxwelle, Middletone, Throgmortone, Gage, Swynburne, and sondrie otheres, beare testimonie.

Thys ii daie of Maie.—Dreerilie has passedd ye tyme synce thatt Cuthberte returnedd, in endeavores on ye parte of mie Ladie soe to arrange matteres, for thatt shee maie ye more speedilie departe to ye soe moche desiredd meetinge wyth ye husbande, whome hyr harte soe deerlie cherishes. And nowe onlie awaites shee ye paymente of monies longe owinge to hyr, beinge hyr marriage portione; ye whych I moche feare Maister Greenvyle advysedlie delaies to paye, for thatt hee wylls not hys systere sholde bee free fro' hys powere: and moche has hee chafedd, for thatt Syr Walter Tremayne and Maister Carewe had done, as it were, ye office of stewardes to ye poore Ladie, collectinge ye rentes and paymentes dewe fro' ye laundes, pledginge themselves dulie to transmitt theese monies to Syr Hubert as hee sholde dyrecte, and proferringe to contynue thys servyce after thatt mie ladie sholde bee beyonde seas; butt wythoute hyr portionn shee maie nott departe, or mayhap it wyll be loste for aye; and Syr Walter stronglie has counselledd hyr to abyde til it is paide. Gladlie nathelesse wolde shee riske ye losse, th' soonere to rejoine hyr husbande, didd not th' thoughtes of hyr childerne make hyr chuse ye

rathere to submitt to a longe cheerlesse partinge, than depryve them, bye yieldinge to hyr owne impatiaunce, of ye monies shee wolde have to bequeathe to them. Hartilie albeit doe I praie thatt ye poore Ladies trobels maie not laste moch longer space; hyr helthe can ill endure so heavie a loade of care; dailie, despight of highe resolve, hyr mynde and courage declyne apace, tho' once soe firme, and able seemingelie to resiste al stormes of foulle adversitie; and ye piouse resignacionn of ye Xtian, and ye proude bearinge of hyr highe borne spyritt, both quaile alike under thys soe lengthenedd storme of toilsome greefe. Yt was but yester noone, as I enteredd ye gallerie fro' mie celle, for mie accustomedd walke, I sawe mie Ladie staunde before ye portraitures of Syr Hubert, hyrselfe and th' chylderne. Shee heeded mee nott, for sadnesse absorbedd hyr, as wyth streeminge eies shee gazedd on ye moche lovedd features of hyr absente Lorde and sonnes. "Oh!" saide shee, "ye daies of happinesse nowe fledd for aye! what now is lefte to mie sorrowinge harte but ye sadd remembraunce, and ye thoughte thatt never more can ye returne! Never more in thys deere home shall I agen beholde mie soe lovedd

Hubert! never agen shall I, standinge as thatt portrayture presentes, in ye fayre pleasaunce, wyth gladsome and contentedd mynde, viewe ye mirtheful pastimes of mie chylderne, ye whiles theire soe deere fathere for a shorte space biddinge mee farewelle, wente to ye hawkinge, onlie to returne wyth lyghtsome harte to ye halles of hys fatheres, whych shall sheltere hym nowe no more, and to ye poore fonde wyff who nowe is as a berefte and sorrowinge widowe! Nott in a joyouse pleasaunce, butt in a gloomie prisonn was it, thatt mie deere husbande bade mee laste farewelle, nor was it for ye breefe houres of a morninges sporte, but for weekes, longe monthes, alack! mayhapp for aye." Then turninge to ye portraieture of Maister Tregiann and hys Ladie—"And ye, too, mie soe deere frendes," saide shee, "never shall I agen enjoie youre soe solaceinge converse. Tyme has rolledd on, and stil in a dismall prisonnes walles ye paie ye penaltie for thatt ye wolde not denie our heavenlie faithe; and thro' xvii longe yeeres of sufferinge, stil is yr constancie as greate, stil is yr resolve ye same, as whenn ye evill passiones of ye disappointedd womann overcame ye Queene withyn a royall breste, and lawlesse affeccionnes tyde

turnedd backe, soone chaunged to deadlie hate! Yett dismall as is youre lotte, mie soe deere kinneswomann, I needes muste envie you, for you are ever wyth y^e^ husbande of y^r^ love, noe seas divyde ye, and wyth hym a prisonn is to you a palaice. Y^e^ whiles thys faire and once lovedd mansionn, bereavedd of its maister, is to mee butt as a loathesome dungeone. And, oh! whenn cann I hope to flee; methynkes al colde bee borne, y^e^ losse of libertie, of goodes, wolde be as naughte, so thatt I were wyth mie Hubert and mie sonnes!" And f^m^ mie harte didd I share in theese soe sorrowinge lamentes of y^e^ poore ladie whose pale and waistedd lookes most sadlie testifie y^e^ greevinges of hyr mynde; yet was mie sorrowynge chaungedd, as ofte it has beene, to admiracionn, when that approachinge hyr wyth wordes of holie consolacionn, instantlie did hyr teares cease to flowe, as wyth meeke and almoste cheerfulle speeche, shee prayedd for resignacionn to th' divyne wyll, whereto earnestlie shee soughte to bende hyr, angeringe wyth herselfe for thatt aughte of lamente sholde 'scape hyr lippes.

Thys vi daie.—Vayne were mie hopes for

thatt mie ladies trobells were welle nigh ending, for contrarie wise, more heavie doe thei gatheere aroundde hyr; y^e Sheriffe thys daie hath sente a missive, y^e wych wyll neerlie, I feare, vanquishe y^e al of courage thatt remainedd to hyr; as recusante convicte, y^e wych Syr Huberte was adjudgedd to bee, and soe bye implicacionn is mie ladie, shee is bye y^e acte restrainedd fro' journeyinge more than v miles fro' hyr dwellinge, or bye doinge soe wolde shee incurr forfeiture of landes and goodes. Deadlie has beene in verie truthe y^e malice thatt has putt this in force agenste hyr, for welle is it knowne howe thatt shee wyshedd to followe Syr Hubert, and yet to forfeite y^e laundes wyll neerlie drive thys haplesse familie to beggarie.

Thys xv daie.—I feare yn verie truthe thatt y^e soe desolate ladie wyl lose hyr wytts. Al thatt Syr Walter, who came att hyr biddinge, has devysedd, shee can butt reject; for al tende to y^e seeminge denial of y^e faythe. Thatt shee wolde attende y^e newe fangledd worshippe, or thatt hyr eldeste sonne colde returne fromm forayne partes, and seeminglie enclyne to y^e newe doctrynes, then colde hee agen secrethe

departe, and Syr Walter wolde holde y^e^ landes yn truste for hym, for thatt by thys acte of conformitie, wolde hee bee impoweredd to seaze y^e^ landes forfeite by hys recusante parentes.—Alacke for unhappie Englaunde! when gross treacherie and cruell injustice are protectedd, naie, enjoinedd by lawe; and to y^e^ childe is th' brybe helde oute, by renouncinge hys faithe, to enriche hym wyth y^e^ spoyles of hys own father! Spyes are sett arounde y^e^ howse so thatt none maie departe, and neerlie like one dementit, does mie ladie dailie pace y^e^ chaumberes and plesaunce, fearinge almoste to liste to y^e^ pleadinges of hyr harte, wych wolde fayne urge hyr to leave landes and goodes, and flee whithere fonde affectionn points y^e^ waie; butt styll shee findes thatt shee maie not contente thys longinge of hyr minde, at y^e^ pryce of thatt heritage whych dewtie wolde compell hyr to preserve to hyr sonne.

Thys xvii daie.—As y^e^ morne began to brake, goinge forthe fro' mie celle, as I lookedd thro' y^e^ oriel of y^e^ gallerie, I espiedd sondrie, somm on horses, somm on foote, advanceinge thro' y^e^ trees towardes y^e^ gate-howse: hastilie I ranne

to y^e^ stayre's hedd and calledd Cuthberte, but y^e^ faithfull youthe wot of theire approach ere I perceivedd them, and Gervase ranne to telle mee thatt hys brothere was summoninge th' servauntes, meaninge to holde a parleye at y^e^ gate and refuse to admitt them, y^e^ whyles th' little altar in mie celle, and y^e^ churche stuffe whych I have kepte for presente use, colde bee stowedd awaie. Quicklie then wee rann to th' hydinge place under y^e^ stayre, and thear wee safelie concealedd y^e^ stuffe; and y^e^ altar, maide onlie of loose boardes, beinge strippedd, was laide on y^e^ floore: then enjoinge mee to keepe close, for thatt hee doubtedd not y^e^ searche was for mee, Gervase rann to joine y^e^ otheres at y^e^ gate-howse: leavinge openn then y^e^ doore of mie celle, soe thatt I colde in a momente entere in yt, I styll venturedd to peepe forthe from y^e^ oriel; and sawe mie ladie wyth seeminge calme demeanore and highe bearinge, slowlie crosse y^e^ cowrte, and in fewe, albeit angrie, wordes of firme resolve, aske whearfore an armedd bodie daredd invade hyr gates; thei answaredd, thatt hearinge of a suretie thatt a preeste laie concealedd wythin y^e^ mansionn, thatt thei came to searche itt. Whearupponn

righte steadilie shee deniedd them entraunce, protestinge thatt none sholde searche ye howse save by force,—whereoff shee bade them to beware; "For," saide shee, "defencelesse as mie poore howse maie seeme, and lone and bereaved tho' I bee, styll am I nott wythout defenders; stronge armes bee thear, and hartes of stoute resolve; deeplie dothe rankle in ye mindes of mie soe faithefull peasauntrie, ye evill usage shewn to theire soe lovedd maister; and thei burne to wreake theire vengeance for ye doinges of thatt soe dolefull morninge, whenn, obeyinge theire deare lordes beheste, thei resistedd nott, butt sawe hym torne fro' hys home and lodgedd wythin a prisonne. I warne ye, then; and styll iff ye wyll take ye cowrse, on yr heddes bee it iff thatt sore mischaunce ensues yr entraunce perforce wythin mie gates." Ye statelie bearinge and courageouse speeche of mie ladie seemedd to win respecte, for, doffinge theire cappes and dismountinge, sondrie approachedd ye gate on foote; beseechinge for thatt she wolde regarde them onlie as instromentes in ye haundes of otheres, and thatt thei were dispatchedd by ye Scheriffe, and noe waies of themselves desieringe to faile in ye respect dew to hyr; yet wyth

claredd thei colde noe waies leave y^e^ howse tyl y^e^ preeste was founde; thearfore, al thatt in haste shee colde collecte, and stowe in y^e^ baskett, shee hadd sente mee; as manie daies mighte elapse ere Gervase colde finde meanes to carrie aughte agen undiscoveredd.

Thys xx daie.—Mie solitarienesse has noe waies beene disturbedd, save by y^e^ noyse of y^e^ searchers dailie walkinge over y^e^ howse, tyll thys forenoone, when I hearde a whispering att mie doore, and y^e^ noise as tho' y^e^ tapestrie was raisedd; listinge earnestlie, I hearde a femaile voice sayinge, "Knock gentlie, an ye hear mee." I didd soe, and y^e^ voyce proceededd,—"Mie ladie sendes mee, in greate distresse of minde, to tell thatt Syr Waltere has beene constrainedd to goe, by a missive fro' hys ladie, who is att y^e^ pointe of dethe; thus is mie poore mistresse lefte wyth thys lawlesse crewe, who, as Syr Waltere rode awaie, laffedd loudlie, for thatt nowe thei sholde have theire waie; thearfore has mie ladie betakenn hyr to Chrystabell's towere wyth hyr women, for thatt shee wyl bee more removedd fro' y^e^ wylde riott thatt is commencinge thro'out y^e^ howse. Moreover, Hugo

has beene hearde to saye, thatt hee wyll of a suretie trie ye pannellinge of ye gallerie, for thatt ye walles are thicke, and like to containe a hidinge hole; ye celle, thearfore, whear now ye abide is noe waies safe; waite then onlie tyll it is dark, and speedilie gaine ye arras wythdrawinge chaumbere, whence, thro' ye waie ye wot of, ye can gett to ye celle belowe."—Ye tapestrie thenn felle, and a suspicionn then crossedd mie minde thatt thys mighte bee a soteltie of ye searchers; but peepinge forthe, I espiedd Mabel, mie ladie's tyre-woman, feigninge as tho' shee sett ye gallerie in ordere, and brushedd ye duste fro' ye chayres; and lookinge at mee shee signedd mee to close mie doore. As th' even came on, I bethoughte mee thatt I wolde endeavore to gaine ye othere celle; gentlie then I oped ye doore, as al was quiett, and I betooke mee to ye farthere end of ye gallerie, when a sodaine noise of voyces on ye greate stayre impededd mie returne, and constrainedd mee in al haste to flee to ye wythdrawinge roome, and happilie founde I in a momente ye naile yn ye shelfe, wych I pressedd, and enteringe th' straitenedd passage, in darknesse gropinge down ye steppes, I gainedd ye celle in safetie. Thys

hadd nott beene made reddie, inasmoche as it is soe lowe and straitenedd thatt none can abide longe wythin it, and I hadd noe chayre or benche whereon to sitt. After a longe space thearfore, I soughte to venture forthe, thinkinge to regaine y^e^ celle in y^e^ gallerie, and bringe thence y^e^ strawe mattresse whereon to laie mee downe; wyth difficoltie I founde mie waie, and thoughte I espiedd a dyme lighte in y^e^ gallerie; in y^e^ oriel a smal lampe was burninge, wherebie I soone founde y^e^ celle; and I hadd hardlie liftedd y^e^ tapestrie when ii menn enteredd th' gallerie fro' y^e^ stayre. Hugo, for it was hee, sayinge to y^e^ othere, "I am full sure y^e^ plate and monies were hydden behynde these pannelinges; colde wee butt finde themm wee neede saie naughte, butt sharinge thatt, lett who wyll finde y^e^ preeste; a silvere flaggon filledd wyth nobles is more to mie minde than ere a shaven crowne amonge them al." But whyles hee yet spake, a groane bothe loude and deepe cut shorte hys speeche; y^e^ knaves stoppedd shorte, and lookedd arounde, anothere groane more piteouse styll ensuedd, and y^e^ tapestrie neare where thei stood seemedd to bee movedd.—"Lo! see you thatt," saidd Hugo,—a groane agen was hearde, and

ye clanke of armes, and a knighte armedd cappe-a-pee stoode forthe, leadinge a ladie wyth an highe and curiouse hedde gear risinge peakedd wyse, from ye topp whearoff dependedd a longe vayle, wych, coveringe hyr face, hunge downe to hyr feete. Ye armedd knighte then waivedd hys haunde, pointinge to ye stayre; nor was it longe ere ye affrightedd knaves obeyedd hym, for faste as theire shakinge limbes wolde move, thei rann followedd by ye knighte and ladie; when as thei passedd, ye doore closedd wyth moche clamoure, and it was lockedd fro' wythoute. Greatlie mervailinge at ye sighte, I wythdrewe, takinge wyth mee ye lampe, mie Breviarie, and a chaire, meaninge to returne for whatt remainedd of provisionne in ye baskett; but havinge placedd these in mie newe abode, as I wente forthe, ye doore of ye gallerie was closedd, and lockedd fro' wythin, I therefore agen soughte ye straitenedd celle, and slepte for some houres on th' floore, tyll wakenedd by ye colde, I founde mieselfe in darknesse, ye lampe havinge gone oute. Longe nowe seemedd ye tyme, enduringe moche paine and weaknesse from lacke of foode, ye wych I neededd moche; and nowe I hearde voyces in ye roome above, and to lyste to

theire discowrse, and finde iff I colde whatt passedd, I gropedd to ye upper celle. Then was Hugo and hys fellowe knave angeringe, for thatt otheres believedd not whatt thei hadd seene ye nighte before, Hugo affirminge it to bee th' troubledd ghostes of Syr Reginalde and ye ladie Christabelle, whereoff hee soe ofte hadd hearde when thatt hee was laccquey to Syr Hubert. It seemedd to mee as thei wear carrousinge, and not caringe to heare more, I agen wente downe to ye lowere celle. I shooke in everie limbe wyth colde, butt soone a gentle warmthe seemedd to rise arounde mee, wych for awhyle was gratefulle, tyll itt increasedd to fierce and ragynge heate, mie verie braine felte scorchedd, and as I satt thear felle uponn mie cassocke fierie sparkes, wych, hadd I nott rysen quicklie, muste have fallen on mie hedd. Then I rememberedd thatt ye celle was straighte belowe ye hearthe of ye arras chambere, and I removedd to ye celle above, where, albeit ye heate almoste impededd mie breathinge, nathelesse, beinge behinde th' chimneye, it was less dredfulle than belowe. Ye nighte (for soe I deemedd itt) seemedd stormie, gustes of winde moanedd thro' th' chaumbere as I listedd to ye knaves; agen was

Hugo recountinge to them ye syghtes thatt hadd scaredd hym in ye gallerie, and thei seemedd more enclynedd to give credence to ye tale; ye dismall tempeste aydinge noe doubte theire feares; when, as wythout ye casemente, myngling wyth ye winde, were hearde deepe groanes and soundes of wo, and wyth a voyce thatt seemedd as tho' itt rather shriekedd than spake, colde be hearde ye awful wordes, "Let al beware th' easterne towere, perforce was I broughte hithere." "Cristabelle! ye ladie Cristabelle!" screamedd Hugo as hee ranne forthe; some stil remainedd, and one venturedd a jeste at hys feare, when th' casemente flewe openn,—"perforce," agenn shriekedd ye voyce, "lett al beware." I warilie oped mie doore, and sawe thro' ye casemente, albeit it was highe fro' ye grounde, ye vayledd face and highe peakedd hedd gear I hadd seene in ye gallerie, and a haunde thatt wavedd towardes ye doore, ye whiles ye affrightedd knaves were soone quicklie runninge thro' th' gallerie; and in anothere momente ye vayledd ladie hadd lefte ye windowe, and I stoode styl uncertaine whither to goe, and almoste bethinkinge mee thatt al was butt a dreame; presentlie, att a doore opposite thatt whearbie ye knaves

[redacted]

y^e^ prowesse of Sir Hubert put mee furthe fro y^e^ howse, and wel annoid was I then thatt hee was a scurvie preste; wyth y^e^ wyllinesse of y^e^ devyll hys maister, alwaies has hee founde meanes to hyde hym; butt y^e^ tyme is come, and wel-shal I now repaie hys kindlie servyces, by a gibettinge and quarteringe at Launcestone Castell. Y^e^ riche chalices nowe nathelesse hadd caughte theire eies, and wyth shoutes of joie seazed thei them, and Hugo, nott to lose hys share, loosedd mie collare, y^e^ wych hee hadd held tyl then; and in a

momente I hadd wyth al speede dartedd thro' ye lowe doore leadinge fro' ye parloure to th' pleasaunce, hopinge to gayne ye posterne neere to Cristabelles towere, but as I essaïedd to ope ye doore, I bethoughte mee thatt al was loste, as I founde itt lockedd; ye wych it is like th' servauntes hadd done when thatt firste ye howse was besett, because thei wolde have respitte to hyde ye goodes and thinges of peryll; att ye momente ye searchers followinge, came up wyth mee. I then putt on what calmnesse of demeanour I colde, sayinge thatt thei neede not feare, I colde not escape them; and whearuponn I calledd loudlie on Gervase to unlocke ye doore, for thatt it was needlesse to thinke to keepe out ye searchers, who nowe hadd founde mee in mie laste hydinge place. After a tyme ye doore was slowlie unlockedd, and enteringe hastilie and speakinge angrilie as tho' I continuedd mie speeche of findinge faulte wyth theire longe delaie, in al speede I pushedd backe ye doore, and lockedd itt, runninge as for ye verrie lyffe to ye towere stayre, ye wych breathlesslie I mountedd, and in ye upper chaumbere I founde th' hearthestone raysedd and a laddere placedd, ye wych I descendedd, and opinge a trappe in

ye floore, viii steppes more ledd mee downe to ye lowere celle, ye wych I foundè made reddy—mie bokes and writinges, a lampe, and a baskett wyth meates.—Soone was I followedd by Gervase, burninge wyth curiositie whearforè I was in ye pleasaunce, and hadd causedd hym to unlocke ye doore. I toldè hym, askinge then of hym colde hee telle aughte of ye soe mervailouse sightes I hadd witnessedd, and ye wych causedd soè greate panikè amongè our unbidden guestes. "Of a suretie," quothe Gervase, "wel have theese sorrie fellowes shewne forthe ye truth of ye sayinge, thatt ye greater ye knave ye greater ye cowardè. Longe hadd itt beene mie brother Cuthberte hys pastyme, when thatt Hugo was lacqueye here, to affrighte hym wyth gossippes tales, how thatt ye ladie Cristabelle walkedd ye towere chamberes; soe thatt albeit ye knave wolde prye into everie corner, none sawe hym e'er adventure up ye towere staire. When thatt hee came, thearfore, to aide ye searche, wee resolvedd to turne hys foolishe panike to account, layinge ye plotte wyth sondrie of ye householde, and faininge moche feare ourselves; wel has successe crownedd our mummeries, and butt a fewe daies more I doubte not to see ye howse

cleare of these vermine, and al by ye aide of goode Ladie Cristabelle and hyr soe cruelle knighte Syr Reginalde,—forasmoche as theire unquiett spiritts are nowe seene to walke, not onlie on ye towere staire, butt in ye gallerie and wythdrawinge chamberes, and synce yesternighte I overhearde Hugo saie thatt none after nighte falle shal adventure to leave ye smal chambere wythin ye halle; and theare have al ye searchers as it were entrenchedd them, as tho' thei wolde guarde eache ye othere agenste ye soe fearfulle sightes; albeit thei are nowe assailedd thro' ye windowes of this theire stronge holde." "Ye knighte in armoure then," saidd I, "thatt I espiedd in ye gallerie, leadinge a ladie?" "Ye ladie hyrselfe now speakes wyth you," answeredd Gervase laffinge, "for thatt I colde noe waies prevaile wyth ye daintie Mistresse Mabell to enacte ye parte; and verilie ye Ladie Cristabelle has beene ofte in soche manifolde peryll, 'scapinge onlie by climbinge in and oute of windowes, and on roofes and walles, thatt Mabelle colde not have done th' mummerie," "And ye armedd knighte?"—"Was Cuthberte in ye olde suit of armour, the wych lyes nowe at ye lower chambere doore; for

synce wee tooke itt secretlie fro' y^e^ halle, wee keepe it to use as occasionn serues." "But y^e^ ladie thatt scaredd y^e^ carousers peepinge in at y^e^ wyndowe of y^e^ wythdrawinge chambere, at soche heighte fro' y^e^ grounde?" "Y^e^ ladie has beene seene moche higher, Fathere, where thear was neede. Ytwas then of necessitie to drive y^e^ knaves forthe, thatt soe ye mighte leave thatt straitenedd celle; but an y^r^ reverence bethinkes ye of y^e^ auntiente Yew Tree, branchinge harde bie y^e^ windowe, mayhapp y^e^ ladie's peepinge maie seeme more easie. Now muste I to mie nightlie toile agen, and iff thatt I can, to morrowe I wyl returne wyth furthere stores, thatt soe mie goode Fathere maye noe waies feele a lacke of foode, coupledd wyth y^e^ evylls of captivitie. Yn al safetie, nathelesse, maie ye after nighte falle mounte y^e^ laddere to y^e^ upper chaumbere, for none wyll dare disturbe ye: by y^e^ daie ye might bee seene fro' y^e^ plesaunce at y^e^ windowe." After y^e^ goode youthe hadd lefte mee, al seeminge quiett, I betooke mee to y^e^ upper chaumbere for aire; y^e^ celle belowe is lowe and hott, and fro' y^e^ lengthe of tyme I have passedd neerlie as a prisoner, mie strengthe failes mee moche; mie minde nathelesse, praisedd bee

Godde! as yett failes mee not; and sholde itt bee hys wyll thatt I sholde escape theese straites, and bee enabledd agen to toile in ye vineyarde, I wyll toile on to ye laste.

Thys xxix daie.—Mie solitarienesse is wearisome to mee, as mie anxietie is greate to heare of mie ladie. Yt is nowe iv daies synce thatt a baskett wyth meates was lett downe into th' celle; and a straunge voyce saidd, thatt Gervase colde noe waies as yet returne to mee, butt thatt hee desiredd I sholde knowe thatt al was now reddy for mie ladie to escape; thatt soone I sholde heare more, and thatt hee besoughte mee to keepe close duringe ye daie. Whearfore I was righte gladd to finde a large store of oile for mie lampe, bye ye gloomie light whearoff I needes muste bee contente to remaine.

Thys iii daie of June.—Hartilie didd I thys daie welcome Gervase, whenn thatt I hearde hym descend ye laddere, ye whiles hee exclaimed joiefullie, "I bringe ye newes, Father, ye wych wil lyghten youre cares. Yt is nowe iv nightes agone, thatt bye harde entreatie didd Cuthberte prevaile wyth mie ladie to donne ye attyre of

ye ladie Christabelle, and essaie to traverse ye pleasaunce; soe thatt it myghte bee seene howe thatt shee colde in thatt disguisinge safelie make goode hyr flyghte, ledd by Cuthberte in hys suit of armour. Mie ladie lefte ye towere bie th' smal posterne, and walkedd rounde ye howse; naie, takinge courage for thatt shee encounteredd no one, shee lookedd thro' ye baye windowe of ye halle, ye whiles I, staundinge neere hyr, shriekedd forthe ye fearefulle "Perforce was I broughte hythere," and, as ye moone shone brightlie on hyr vayle, sondrie who yet loiteredd in ye halle, espyeinge itt, ranne hastilie to th' innere chambere. Welle hadd ye plotte beene laide; and Cuthberte impatiauntlie cravedd thatt mie ladie wolde delaie no longere, speciallie for thatt Hugo, and ye othere knave who founde ye costlie chalyces, havinge as wee thynke revealedd naughte of ye spoile to ye reste, at thys tyme fainedd a pretexte to absente themm for some daies, ye bettere mayhapp to dyspose of theire bootie; for Hugo, havinge Argus hys eies, wolde soone fynde iff thatt mie ladie was no longer wythin ye towere, ere shee wolde have tyme to get fairlie out of ye countrie. Ye nexte nighte was darke and stormie, moste proper for

soche an attempte; albeit, some darynge it neededd to walke thro' ye gates yn ye gate-house, for as moche as ye posterne leadynge fro' ye pleasaunce to ye parke was kepte stronglie barredd. After nighte falle, warilie slyppinge forthe, I contryvedd wyth ye poynte of mye rapier to thruste backe ye locke of ye greate gate, for none adventuredd to sleepe at ye gate-howse; and att midnighte didd mie ladie walke, as th' nighte before, arounde ye howse, and wyth difficoltie thro' ye darknesse founde shee ye gate-howse, ye whiles, wyth shreekes and groanes at ye windowe, I kepte ye knaves faste in ye chambere wythin ye halle. Cuthberte awaitedd mie ladie at th' gate, and, despighte ye wynde and raine, gainedd thei safelie mie olde motheres dwellinge. The daie after mie ladie hyr flighte, Mabell fayninge sicknesse, askedd of them thatt acte ye parte of gaoleres, thatt shee mighte leave ye howse, for thatt ye straite confynement hurte hyr: and for thatt shee promisedd not to attempte to returne, thei consentedd; ye wych gave hyr a faire pretexte to conveie forthe, as hyr owne, sondrie wearinge apparel of mie ladies, whom shee strai'twaies joinedd; and thys eveninge has mie mothere, cominge as iff to waite on mie ladie in

y^e^ steade of Mabell, tolde mee thatt thys moru-inge, ere it was lyghte, mie ladie and hyr bowere-woman, attiredd as peasauntes, on horses ledd by Cuthberte, alsoe in countrie geare, set forthe, journeyinge thro' bie waies towardes y^e^ coaste. Att Falmouthe is a frende awaitinge them, and a vessell wil bee readie to conveye themm to Dun-kirke."—"But howe," saidd I, "colde al this sot-teltie bee plannedd, y^e^ whiles Cuthberte has been closelie kepte wythinn these walles?" "Thei are nowaies soe highe," quoth Gervase, "but that wrytten myssives maie flie over themm. I maie not saie itt, as, were it knowne, y^e^ forfeyture of goodes, maichappe of lyffe, wolde ensue to a ryghte worthie knighte; nathelesse in your eare, Fathere, I maie whispere, thatt Syr Walter Tremayne has provedd himselfe to bee to mie ladie y^e^ frende thatt he styledd hymselfe. Yt is nowe some tyme synce, thatt, walkinge in th' pleasaunce, I espiedd one wythoute y^e^ walle closelie muffledd, who seemedd to watche mee; and who, seeinge I was alone, threwe a sealedd papere to mee, and hastilie ranne awaie: thys takinge to mie ladie, shee founde was fro' Syr Walter, offeringe hys utmoste servyces, colde hee in any waies assyst hyr to escape; and thatt

wolde shee vouchsafe a written replie, after nyghte falle one sholde bee wythout ye walle, who wolde conveie it safelie. Thus has ye traine beene laide; and nowe, iff thatt in ye darkenesse I can slippe oute unseene, I muste gaine Syr Waltere hys dwellinge; forasmoche as mie ladie anxiouslie soughte to leave sondrie wryteinges in hys custodie, ye whiche are sewne wythinn mie doublette, and whych I truste safelie to deliver to hym. Moche doe I hope thatt wythin fewe daies ye searchers wil departe, weariedd as thei are wyth theire soe fruitlesse searche. Mie mothere wil remayne in ye lower chambere of ye towere, and, as occasion serves, lett downe th' baskette to supplie your wantes, and, whenn thatt I can, I wyl returne; hideinge mieselfe wythin hyr dwellinge, unlesse ye knaves sholde have alreadie lefte ye place; thenn shal I boldlie returne to leade ye forthe to lighte and libertie; ye muste meanwhyles I feare, Fathere, abyde closelie in thys lowere celle, leste ye leaste noyse sholde cause a discoverie, and but for a fewe shorte daies 'twere pittie to runn ye riske. I wil thearfore nowe wythdrawe ye laddere, and th' hearthstone I can nearlie slyde over ye upper trappe, yet leave a space wherebie ye baskette

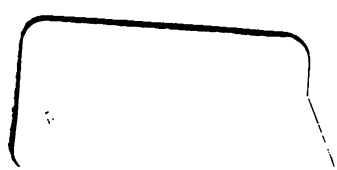
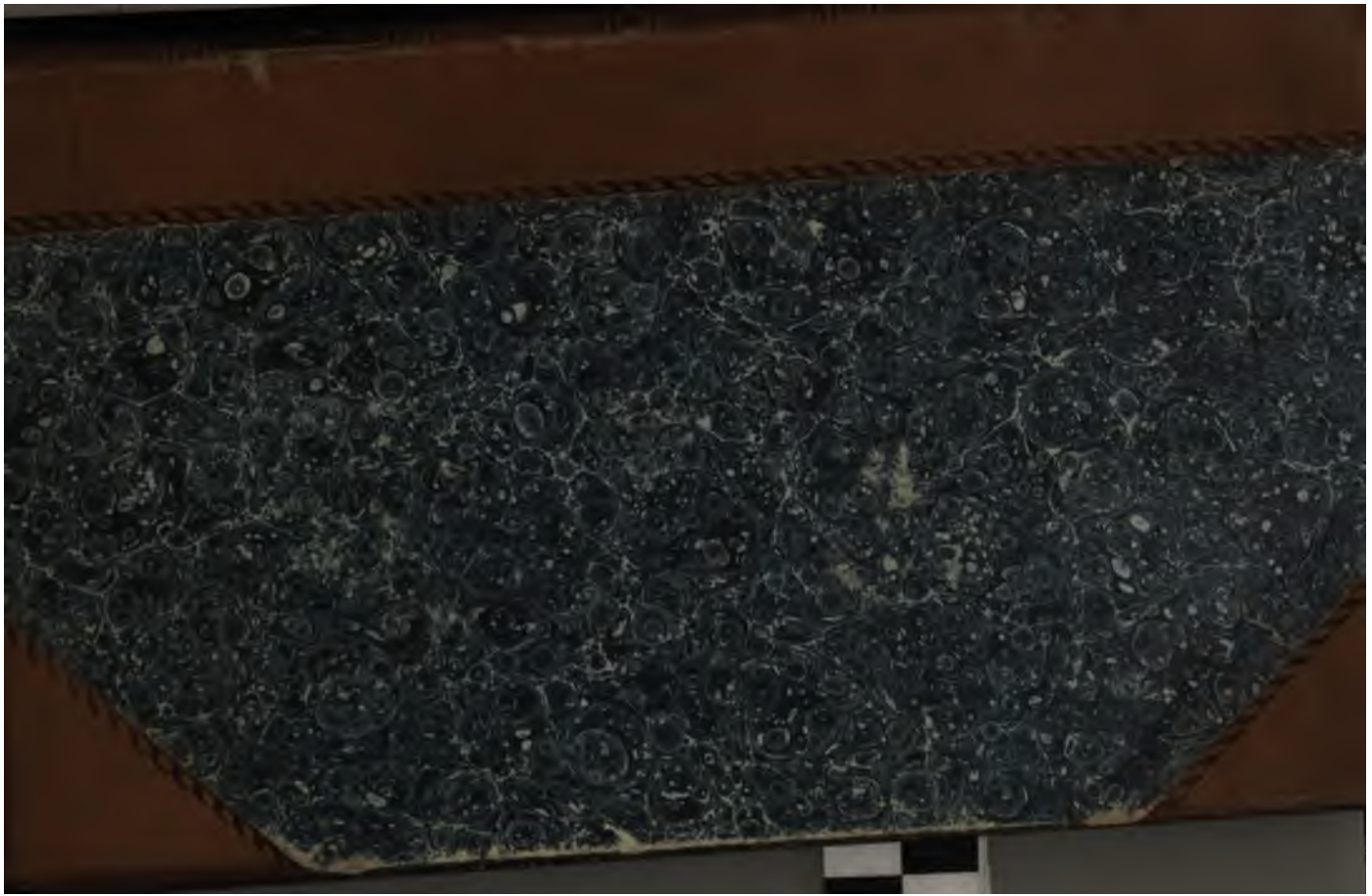
essayinge to finde a trappe. Lystinge earnestlie I colde catche ye wordes, "Ye ladie Christabelle hyrselfe shal nôt preventе us, lyke ye fooles thatt have laine here soe longe, scaredd bie will-o'-th' wispes or theire owne fantasies." After a tyme al was agen quiett. ——— ——— ———

Manie daies nowe seeme to mee to have passedd; and of late al is soe stil, that I almoste feele thatt to bee discoveredd wolde bee a releefe fro' horridd feares, thatt, despighte mie truste in Godd, despighte ye resignacionn wyth wych I earnestlie stryve to bend mee to hys holie wyl, tormente and neerlie deprive mee of powere to thynke or praie. — Ye panges of hunger fiercelie assayle mee, for it is nowe longe synce thatt mie store of foode is gone. — Almi'tie Lorde have mercie on mee! — Al I have is thyne —— dyspose of al as thou willeste. —— Ryghte happie sholde I bee iff thatt mie lyffe were sacrificedd for thye deere sake.——Manie are thear whome once I knewe and lovedd, and whoe wyth joie have welcomedd everie tormente in ye cause of oure holie faithe, and who have gave gone to dethe — wyth joie —— haylinge it as ye gate of a blessedd eternitie. —— Oh!

maie theire praiers, and eke those of our blessedd ladie and yᵉ sayntes, procure mee lyke constancie — and strengthe. —— Methoughte I hearde foote steppes, and crawlinge to yᵉ trappe I criedd out amaine —— but mie voyce is weake —— none hearde. ——— Straunge voyces rynge in mie eares ——— wyth groanes and shriekes —— belyke it is but fantasie. ——— Yᵉ wordes thatt I soe ofte have mockedd, as yᵉ coynage of dystemperedd braynes and low unlearnedd myndes, I seeme to heare in tones of fierce despaire screamedd loudlie — "Perforce was I broughte hithere — none but perforce shall sojourn here — let al beware yᵉ easterne towere, for hee thatt laies hym down wythin it, shal close hys eies for aye." ——— Eache houre mie strengthe fayles mee more —— iff thatt ayde comes not quicklie —— I can not longe endure. —— O Jesu, dyinge on yᵉ roode for guiltie mann! —— have pittie on mee ——— accepte in mercie for mie manie sinnes, yᵉ sacrifice of mie lyffe. —— To dye wythin a lyvinge tombe —— alone —— no frende to ayde, or to speake sweete wordes of comforte ——— thys to frayle nature maie seeme harde ——— but joie thatt passeth humann

understaundinge cheeres and sustaines mee —— and farre beyonde thys darkesome celle appeares a bryghtere worlde ——— and before y^e^ radiaunte visyons of glorie eternalle, vanyshe eache feelynge of thys poore mortalle fleshe. ———— Maie y^e^ holie wyll of Godd be done! ———— Maie hee bee glorifiedd bye al and in al ——— Maie hee forgive those whoe have done mee evyll, even as hartilie as I forgive them and truste for pardonn at hys haundes.———————— Sweete Jesu turne theire hartes to goode——— give themm to repente of theire ill doinges. —— And O protecte thys moste unhappie countrie ——— ——— and graunte thatt thye holie faythe maie safelie abyde wythin it ——— and yet unbrokenn bye thys storme of persecucionn ———— once more agen shyne forthe and prosper. ———————— Blessedd Marye praie for mee. ——— —— ——— ——— ——

[*The last pages of the MS. had evidently been written by a hand gradually becoming weaker and more tremulous, till the characters were hardly legible, and some incoherent blotted sentences followed, which it was impossible to decypher. The remains found by Elliot in the hiding hole of Trewardreth explained the termination of the narrative.*]

FINIS.

PRINTED AT ST. PAUL'S PRESS, PRIOR PARK, BY W. MURRAY.